

AMERICA

OR

626

AN EXACT DESCRIPTION OF THE WEST-INDIES:

MORE ESPECIALLY

Of those Provinces which are
under the Dominion of the
King of SPAIN.

Faithfully represented by N. N. Gent.

LONDON,

Printed by R. H. for Edw. Dod, and are to be
sold at the Gun in Ivy-lane, 1657.

23

798 a.3.

K

AMERICAN

OR

626

AN EXACT DESCRIPTION OF THE WEST-INDIES:

MORE ESPECIALLY

Of those Provinces which are
under the Dominion of the
King of SPAIN.

Faithfully represented by N. N. Gent.

LONDON,

Printed by R. H. for Edw. Dod, and are to be
sold at the Gun in Ivy-lane, 1657.

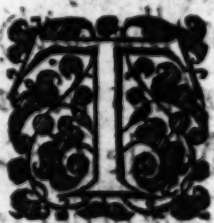
33



598

~~*****~~
TO
The worthily Honoured
Mr. JOHN ROBINSON, of
London Merchant, the Author
wistheth all happiness in this
and a better Life.

Honoured Sir,



Here be two Reasons, why this
Stranger presumeth to address
himself to you. The one is to
take Sanctuary under the
Patronage of your honoured
name. For, though he be no
Grand Delinquent, nor guilty

The Epistle Dedicatory.

of any such offence, that he should much fear or fly the Sentence of Justice: yet for many small faults & imperfections in his book (which the over hasty casting together of his observations could not well avoid) he will be found perhaps not a little obnoxious to Molestation and Censure. The other is to pay a Tribute of Due Acknowledgement to your Vertue and Noblenesse; of which, all that know you are good witnesses. And who doth not know
you,

The Epistle Dedicatory.

you, either in your Person or
Fame, in this great and flou-
rishing City? Who doth
not speake you for a Mirrour
of much Generosity and Good-
ness in your self; and also a Fa-
vorer and Cherisher of all
good and honest endeavors in
others? For this reason Sir (it
being the Authors ambition,
not to seem altogether ignorant
of a thing so generally known)
he presumeth upon this bold
Address: being only unhappy
that he cannot (for some neces-

The Spillie Dedicatory.

For reasons that binder him
Immortalize his own name, as
he hopeth to doe his book by an
inscription of such eminent
Merit and Worth. Permit it,
noblest Sir, for this once to be
thus. Hereafter (if it please
God) I may have some better
liberty to profess my self your
Servant, and to let the World
know how much I honour Ver-
tue and Goodness in you. So
resteth, Sir, with his best wishes
for your health and the en-
crease of all prosperitie to you,

Your most humble Servant

N. N.

Wisedome hath decreed to be

~~the best way to attain to it~~
~~is by the study of the~~
~~liberal sciences~~

to have benched something is

THE

Publishers Advertisement to

the Reader.

And the one which hath been given

And

How hath here, court

teous Reader, pre

sented to thee a ge

nerall view of those

remote, but rich and goodly

parts of the World, to which

the Hand of Divine Providence

seemeth at this time to be lea

ding the English Nation, for

the execution of those things,

which his Divine Justice and

Wisedome

To the Reader.

Wisedome hath decreed to be done by them. It might seem perhaps not altogether unfitting, to have prefixed something in this place, concerning the Reason of the States Resolution, and the *Great and Transcendent Cause* which hath been given, why the English Forces should move that way in the manner they doe, as well to satisfie the Nation in the Justice of that Design, wherein they are likely to be so much engaged, as to stop the Mouths of some exasperated Englishmen, who are ready to asperse the Action with the imputation of Pyracie, and other unseemly characters of their Disaffection.

To the Reader.

affection. And truly the Author
once intended so much. But
being a man otherwise (as he
freely professeth) and saving the
respects & duty which he oweth
to his Native Countrie, no way
disaffected to the Good and Ho-
nor of *Spain*; and seeing there
hath been such Honorable Ap-
plication made from that
Crown to his Highness and the
State of *England*, as, 'tis yet sup-
posed, may accommodate things
in difference, and prevent War,
he thinks it more reasonable at
present to be silent, and expect,
as with his best wishes he doth,
the certain issue of that Nego-
tiation, and (if it may so please
God)

To the Reader

God) an establishment of Peace
betwixt the Nations. Not being
able otherwise but to fear, and
almost to ominate, affliction and
ill success to that part, which
I shall persist to deny Justice, and
give cause of the war. Of which
in breif having thus premoni-
shed thee, Reader, I bid thee
heartily fare-well in our Lord.

June 14.

A. B.

1655.
in difference, and prevent War.
he thinks it more reasonable
present to be silent, and expect
The
the certain issue of that Nego-
tiation, and (if it may be please
God)

The Contents of the first Part.

Chap. 1.

Of the Globe of the Earth in general, and of the general parts which it containeth.

Chap. 2.

Of America in particular, and of its first discovery by Christopher Columbus, Americus Vesputius, and others.

Chap. 3.

Of the voyage to America; or the ordinary course of Navigation, which the Spaniards hold, to and from the West-Indies.

Chap. 4.

Of some particular Adventures made by the English into the parts of America; especially those of Sir Francis Drake, Sir Thomas Cavendish, the Lord Admiral Clifford, and others, which are briefly related.

Chap. 5.

Of the situation and most probable extent of the New-World, the temperature and disposition of the Aire there, the quality of the Soil, and Nature of its several Climates.

Chap. 6.

Of the principall Commodities of America, both Native and Mercantile; and first of Maize, of Cassavi, Jucca and other Roots there, of which they make bread.

Chap

The Contents.

Chap. 7.

Of some choise and excellent Fruits and Fruit-bearing Trees at the West-Indies.

Chap. 8.

Of Cacao, and the famous drink called Chocolate, of Atolle, and other drinks used at the West-Indies.

Chap. 9.

Of the abundance of Cattel at the West-Indies; and of several sorts of Beasts and other Creatures, both of Land and Water, proper to the New-World.

Chap. 10.

Of Sugar-Canes, Cotton-wool, Mulberry-Trees, and Silk-worms, at the West-Indies.

Chap. 11.

Of the abundance and excellency of the Metals at the West-Indies; especially of Gold and Silver.

Chap. 12.

Of the famous Silver Mines of Potozi; and of the Pearls and Pearl-fishing at the West-Indies.

The Contents of the second Part.

Chap. 1.

O*F the general division of the New-World into Continent and Islands; and of the two parts of the Continent, viz. the Northern and the Southern.*

Chap.

The Contents.

Chap. 2.

of Estociland, and the several Provinces which it containeth.

Chap. 3.

of Canada, and the Countries belonging to it.

Chap. 4.

of Virginia, and the Countries thereto belonging.

Chap. 5.

of Florida.

Chap. 6.

of California.

Chap. 7.

of New-Gallicia.

Chap. 8.

of New-Spain, and its Provinces.

Chap. 9.

of Guatimala.

Chap. 10.

of Peruana, or the Southern part of America.

Chap. 11.

of Castella Aurea.

Chap. 12.

of New-Granada.

Chap.

The Contents.

- Chap. 1.
Of the Kingdom of Peru.
- Chap. 2.
Of the Province of Chile.
- Chap. 3.
Of Paraguay, or Rio de la Plata.
- Chap. 4.
Of Brazil.
- Chap. 5.
Of Guiana.
- Chap. 6.
Of Paria, or New-Andalusa.
- Chap. 7.
Of the American Islands.
- Chap. 8.
The Caribee Islands.
- Chap. 9.
Hispaniola.
- Chap. 10.
Cuba.
- Chap. 11.
Jamaica.
- Chap. 12.
New-Granada.

17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
109
110
111
112
113
114
115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
123
124
125
126
127
128
129
130
131
132
133
134
135
136
137
138
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147
148
149
150
151
152
153
154
155
156
157
158
159
160
161
162
163
164
165
166
167
168
169
170
171
172
173
174
175
176
177
178
179
180
181
182
183
184
185
186
187
188
189
190
191
192
193
194
195
196
197
198
199
200
201
202
203
204
205
206
207
208
209
210
211
212
213
214
215
216
217
218
219
220
221
222
223
224
225
226
227
228
229
230
231
232
233
234
235
236
237
238
239
240
241
242
243
244
245
246
247
248
249
250
251
252
253
254
255
256
257
258
259
260
261
262
263
264
265
266
267
268
269
270
271
272
273
274
275
276
277
278
279
280
281
282
283
284
285
286
287
288
289
290
291
292
293
294
295
296
297
298
299
300
301
302
303
304
305
306
307
308
309
310
311
312
313
314
315
316
317
318
319
320
321
322
323
324
325
326
327
328
329
330
331
332
333
334
335
336
337
338
339
340
341
342
343
344
345
346
347
348
349
350
351
352
353
354
355
356
357
358
359
360
361
362
363
364
365
366
367
368
369
370
371
372
373
374
375
376
377
378
379
380
381
382
383
384
385
386
387
388
389
390
391
392
393
394
395
396
397
398
399
400
401
402
403
404
405
406
407
408
409
410
411
412
413
414
415
416
417
418
419
420
421
422
423
424
425
426
427
428
429
430
431
432
433
434
435
436
437
438
439
440
441
442
443
444
445
446
447
448
449
450
451
452
453
454
455
456
457
458
459
460
461
462
463
464
465
466
467
468
469
470
471
472
473
474
475
476
477
478
479
480
481
482
483
484
485
486
487
488
489
490
491
492
493
494
495
496
497
498
499
500
501
502
503
504
505
506
507
508
509
510
511
512
513
514
515
516
517
518
519
520
521
522
523
524
525
526
527
528
529
530
531
532
533
534
535
536
537
538
539
540
541
542
543
544
545
546
547
548
549
550
551
552
553
554
555
556
557
558
559
560
561
562
563
564
565
566
567
568
569
570
571
572
573
574
575
576
577
578
579
580
581
582
583
584
585
586
587
588
589
590
591
592
593
594
595
596
597
598
599
600
601
602
603
604
605
606
607
608
609
610
611
612
613
614
615
616
617
618
619
620
621
622
623
624
625
626
627
628
629
630
631
632
633
634
635
636
637
638
639
640
641
642
643
644
645
646
647
648
649
650
651
652
653
654
655
656
657
658
659
660
661
662
663
664
665
666
667
668
669
670
671
672
673
674
675
676
677
678
679
680
681
682
683
684
685
686
687
688
689
690
691
692
693
694
695
696
697
698
699
700
701
702
703
704
705
706
707
708
709
710
711
712
713
714
715
716
717
718
719
720
721
722
723
724
725
726
727
728
729
730
731
732
733
734
735
736
737
738
739
740
741
742
743
744
745
746
747
748
749
750
751
752
753
754
755
756
757
758
759
760
761
762
763
764
765
766
767
768
769
770
771
772
773
774
775
776
777
778
779
780
781
782
783
784
785
786
787
788
789
790
791
792
793
794
795
796
797
798
799
800
801
802
803
804
805
806
807
808
809
810
811
812
813
814
815
816
817
818
819
820
821
822
823
824
825
826
827
828
829
830
831
832
833
834
835
836
837
838
839
840
841
842
843
844
845
846
847
848
849
850
851
852
853
854
855
856
857
858
859
860
861
862
863
864
865
866
867
868
869
870
871
872
873
874
875
876
877
878
879
880
881
882
883
884
885
886
887
888
889
890
891
892
893
894
895
896
897
898
899
900
901
902
903
904
905
906
907
908
909
910
911
912
913
914
915
916
917
918
919
920
921
922
923
924
925
926
927
928
929
930
931
932
933
934
935
936
937
938
939
940
941
942
943
944
945
946
947
948
949
950
951
952
953
954
955
956
957
958
959
960
961
962
963
964
965
966
967
968
969
970
971
972
973
974
975
976
977
978
979
980
981
982
983
984
985
986
987
988
989
990
991
992
993
994
995
996
997
998
999
1000
1001
1002
1003
1004
1005
1006
1007
1008
1009
1010
1011
1012
1013
1014
1015
1016
1017
1018
1019
1020
1021
1022
1023
1024
1025
1026
1027
1028
1029
1030
1031
1032
1033
1034
1035
1036
1037
1038
1039
1040
1041
1042
1043
1044
1045
1046
1047
1048
1049
1050
1051
1052
1053
1054
1055
1056
1057
1058
1059
1060
1061
1062
1063
1064
1065
1066
1067
1068
1069
1070
1071
1072
1073
1074
1075
1076
1077
1078
1079
1080
1081
1082
1083
1084
1085
1086
1087
1088
1089
1090
1091
1092
1093
1094
1095
1096
1097
1098
1099
1100
1101
1102
1103
1104
1105
1106
1107
1108
1109
1110
1111
1112
1113
1114
1115
1116
1117
1118
1119
1120
1121
1122
1123
1124
1125
1126
1127
1128
1129
1130
1131
1132
1133
1134
1135
1136
1137
1138
1139
1140
1141
1142
1143
1144
1145
1146
1147
1148
1149
1150
1151
1152
1153
1154
1155
1156
1157
1158
1159
1160
1161
1162
1163
1164
1165
1166
1167
1168
1169
1170
1171
1172
1173
1174
1175
1176
1177
1178
1179
1180
1181
1182
1183
1184
1185
1186
1187
1188
1189
1190
1191
1192
1193
1194
1195
1196
1197
1198
1199
1200
1201
1202
1203
1204
1205
1206
1207
1208
1209
1210
1211
1212
1213
1214
1215
1216
1217
1218
1219
1220
1221
1222
1223
1224
1225
1226
1227
1228
1229
1230
1231
1232
1233
1234
1235
1236
1237
1238
1239
1240
1241
1242
1243
1244
1245
1246
1247
1248
1249
1250
1251
1252
1253
1254
1255
1256
1257
1258
1259
1260
1261
1262
1263
1264
1265
1266
1267
1268
1269
1270
1271
1272
1273
1274
1275
1276
1277
1278
1279
1280
1281
1282
1283
1284
1285
1286
1287
1288
1289
1290
1291
1292
1293
1294
1295
1296
1297
1298
1299
1300
1301
1302
1303
1304
1305
1306
1307
1308
1309
1310
1311
1312
1313
1314
1315
1316
1317
1318
1319
1320
1321
1322
1323
1324
1325
1326
1327
1328
1329
1330
1331
1332
1333
1334
1335
1336
1337
1338
1339
1340
1341
1342
1343
1344
1345
1346
1347
1348
1349
1350
1351
1352
1353
1354
1355
1356
1357
1358
1359
1360
1361
1362
1363
1364
1365
1366
1367
1368
1369
1370
1371
1372
1373
1374
1375
1376
1377
1378
1379
1380
1381
1382
1383
1384
1385
1386
1387
1388
1389
1390
1391
1392
1393
1394
1395
1396
1397
1398
1399
1400
1401
1402
1403
1404
1405
1406
1407
1408
1409
1410
1411
1412
1413
1414
1415
1416
1417
1418
1419
1420
1421
1422
1423
1424
1425
1426
1427
1428
1429
1430
1431
1432
1433
1434
1435
1436
1437
1438
1439
1440
1441
1442
1443
1444
1445
1446
1447
1448
1449
1450
1451
1452
1453
1454
1455
1456
1457
1458
1459
1460
1461
1462
1463
1464
1465
1466
1467
1468
1469
1470
1471
1472
1473
1474
1475
1476
1477
1478
1479
1480
1481
1482
1483
1484
1485
1486
1487
1488
1489
1490
1491
1492
1493
1494
1495
1496
1497
1498
1499
1500
1501
1502
1503
1504
1505
1506
1507
1508
1509
1510
1511
1512
1513
1514
1515
1516
1517
1518
1519
1520
1521
1522
1523
1524
1525
1526
1527
1528
1529
1530
1531
1532
1533
1534
1535
1536
1537
1538
1539
1540
1541
1542
1543
1544
1545
1546
1547
1548
1549
1550
1551
1552
1553
1554
1555
1556
1557
1558
1559
1560
1561
1562
1563
1564
1565
1566
1567
1568
1569
1570
1571
1572
1573
1574
1575
1576
1577
1578
1579
1580
1581
1582
1583
1584
1585
1586
1587
1588
1589
1590
1591
1592
1593
1594
1595
1596
1597
1598
1599
1600
1601
1602
1603
1604
1605
1606
1607
1608
1609
1610
1611
1612
1613
1614
1615
1616
1617
1618
1619
1620
1621
1622
1623
1624
1625
1626
1627
1628
1629
1630
1631
1632
1633
1634
1635
1636
1637
1638
1639
1640
1641
1642
1643
1644
1645
1646
1647
1648
1649
1650
1651
1652
1653
1654
1655
1656
1657
1658
1659
1660
1661
1662
1663
1664
1665
1666
1667
1668
1669
1670
1671
1672
1673
1674
1675
1676
1677
1678
1679
1680
1681
1682
1683
1684
1685
1686
1687
1688
1689
1690
1691
1692
1693
1694
1695
1696
1697
1698
1699
1700
1701
1702
1703
1704
1705
1706
1707
1708
1709
1710
1711
1712
1713
1714
1715
1716
1717
1718
1719
1720
1721
1722
1723
1724
1725
1726
1727
1728
1729
1730
1731
1732
1733
1734
1735
1736
1737
1738
1739
1740
1741
1742
1743
1744
1745
1746
1747
1748
1749
1750
1751
1752
1753
1754
1755
1756
1757
1758
1759
1760
1761
1762
1763
1764
1765
1766
1767
1768
1769
1770
1771
1772
1773
1774
1775
1776
1777
1778
1779
1780
1781
1782
1783
1784
1785
1786
1787
1788
1789
1790
1791
1792
1793
1794
1795
1796
1797
1798
1799
1800
1801
1802
1803
1804
1805
1806
1807
1808
1809
1810
1811
1812
1813
1814
1815
1816
1817
1818
1819
1820
1821
1822
1823
1824
1825
1826
1827
1828
1829
1830
1831
1832
1833
1834
1835
1836
1837
1838
1839
1840
1841
1842
1843
1844
1845
1846
1847
1848
1849
1850
1851
1852
1853
1854
1855
1856
1857
1858
1859
1860
1861
1862
1863
1864
1865
1866
1867
1868
1869
1870
1871
1872
1873
1874
1875
1876
1877
1878
1879
1880
1881
1882
1883
1884
1885
1886
1887
1888
1889
1890
1891
1892
1893
1894
1895
1896
1897
1898
1899
1900
1901
1902
1903
1904
1905
1906
1907
1908
1909
1910
1911
1912
1913
1914
1915
1916
1917
1918
1919
1920
1921
1922
1923
1924
1925
1926
1927
1928
1929
1930
1931
1932
1933
1934
1935
1936
1937
1938
1939
1940
1941
1942
1943
1944
1945
1946
1947
1948
1949
1950
1951
1952
1953
1954
1955
1956
1957
1958
1959
1960
1961
1962
1963
1964
1965
1966
1967
1968
1969
1970
1971
1972
1973
1974
1975
1976
1977
1978
1979
1980
1981
1982
1983
1984
1985
1986
1987
1988
1989
1990
1991
1992
1993
1994
1995
1996
1997
1998
1999
2000
2001
2002
2003
2004
2005
2006
2007
2008
2009
2010
2011
2012
2013
2014
2015
2016
2017
2018
2019
2020
2021
2022
2023
2024
2025
2026
2027
2028
2029
2030
2031
2032
2033
2034
2035
2036
2037
2038
2039
2040
2041
2042
2043
2044
2045
2046
2047
2048
2049
2050
2051
2052
2053
2054
2055
2056
2057
2058
2059
2060
2061
2062
2063
2064
2065
2066
2067
2068
2069
2070
2071
2072
2073
2074
2075
2076
2077
2078
2079
2080
2081
2082
2083
2084
2085
2086
2087
2088
2089
2090
2091
2092
2093
2094
2095
2096
2097
2098
2099
2100
2101
2102
2103
2104
2105
2106
2107
2108
2109
2110
2111
2112
2113
2114
2115
2116
2117
2118
2119
2120
2121
2122
2123
2124
2125
2126
2127
2128
2129
2130
2131
2132
2133
2134
2135
2136
2137
2138
2139
2140
2141
2142
2143
2144
2145
2146
2147
2148
2149
2150
2151
2152
2153
2154
2155
2156
2157
2158
2159
2160
2161
2162
2163
2164
2165
2166
2167
2168
2169
2170
2171
2172
2173
2174
2175
2176
2177
2178
2179
2180
2181
2182
2183
2184
2185
2186
2187
2188
2189
2190
2191
2192
2193
2194
2195
2196
2197
2198
2199
2200
2201
2202
2203
2204
2205
2206
2207
2208
2209
2210
2211
2212
2213
2214
2215
2216
2217
2218
2219
2220
2221
2222
2223
2224
2225
2226
2227
2228
2229
2230
2231
2232
2233
2234
2235
2236
2237
2238
2239
2240
2241
2242
2243
2244
2245
2246
2247
2248
2249
2250
2251
2252
2253
225

ASIE
PAARS

Anian Reg.

AMERICA SEPTENTRIONALIS

TERRE

Falgatus

DEL

ZUR

La Carmona
La Ladrone
La Ladrone
La Ladrone

AEQVI NOCTIALIS LINEA

MARE

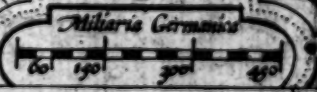
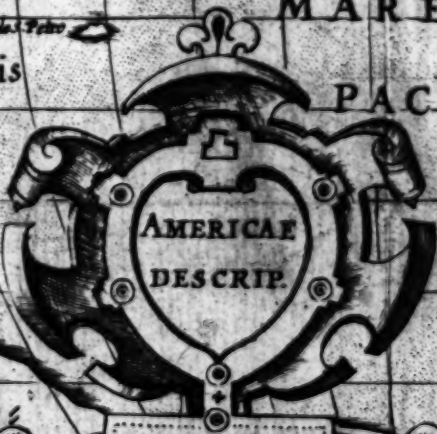
PACIFICUM

NOVA
GUINEA

salomonis
Insul.

TERRE

RAUS



SEPTEN-

NALIS

NOVA

chialis

canada

Marata

Florida

Stans Mexi

canum

Caribbea

Spuria

Califonia

Idaho

Illinoia

Mississipi

Ohio

Indiana

Illinoia

Illinoia

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

Alaska

MAR

DEL

NORT

Africa

pars

L. de C. Verde

Antillas In.

I. de P. de P.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

I. de C.

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

L. de C. Verde

MERIDIONA

LIS

TRALI

S.



ASIE
PAVS

Anian Reg.

AMERICA

TRION

NO
Gran

DEL

DEL

ZUR

AEQVI NOCTIALIS

LINEA

MARE

PACIF

salomonis
Insu.

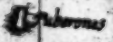
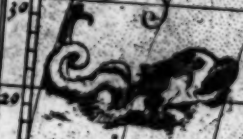
AMERICA
DESCRIP.

R. A. AUSE

Miliaria Germanica



150 160 170 180 190 200 210 220 230 240 250 260 270 280








F th
the

I.

qu
ng
on
tic
Es
ll
C
pe
ng
He

CHAPTER I.

*f the Globe of the Earth in generall, and of
the generall parts which it containeth.*

I.  O D Almighty, the great
and wise Architect of
the Universe, having by
his Divine Power and
Wildome, raised out of
Nothing this stately Fa-
que of the World, and assigned unto all
ings their peculiar Place, Order, and Situ-
on therein, as was most agreeable to their
rticular natures, operations, and properties;
Earth, being the grossest and most materiato
all created Substances, by the Creators eter-
Order and Decree, and its own naturall
pensity, sunk into the lowest place of all
ings, and that which was most distant from
Heavens, viz. into the Center or middle
t of the World, becomming a Basis, as it
re, and Foundation of support unto all o-
B ther

ther elementary Substances or Bodies, as upon which either mediately or immediatly they doe all rest and are sustained in their motions and operations ; it self (speaking of the whole Body or Mass of it) for ever immoveably resting upon its own weight, that is to say, upon the most naturall property of its own Substance which being (as we see by experience in every particular part thereof) irresistibly and directly *to move downward*, that is, from the Heavens and toward the Center ; it follows, that the Globe of the Earth being round (as both Scripture, Philosophie, and experience doe demonstrate it to be) it must needs follow, I say that all and every the parts of this round Body descending so naturally and irresistibly, as they doe, from all parts of the Circumference equally to the Center, that the whole Earth must naturally rest or stand immovable in the midst of the World, or in the middle part of the Circumference of the Heavens, neither moving nor inclining one way or other, in respect of the said Circumference or celestial Sphere because, as 'tis evident, the inclination which any partiular part of it may have, or be supposed to have, to move this way or that : For example, North or South is equally resisted by some other part whose inclination is opposit

and tends as naturally East and West. This the
 scripture *Psalms*. 104. according to the origi-
 al, calleth the founding or establishing of the
 earth upon its own Base, or as the common La-
 tin translations read it *super stabilitatem suam*,
 meaning such a Foundation or Settlement as a-
 riseth out of the Principles and natural Proper-
 ties of its own Substance, & not from any thing
 extrinsecal to it; and may be illustrated to sense
 this familiar example: Let A, B, C, D, be



four quarters of a Circumference or
 are, and E the Center or middle. Let
 be four bullets, of paste or any other Sub-
 stance, whose parts are apt to joyn and unite
 together into one figure. Let them be discharg-
 ed at the same time from the four quarters of
 Circumference, viz. from A, B, C, D, out

of four Cannons or Musquets, of equal bo-
 and strength, directly, or in a right line to-
 wards the Center, or E, where will they mee
 but exactly in or about E, the Center? and
 where will they rest, but there likewise, in ca-
 that E, or the Center, be the naturall place
 them, and that they have no intrinsecal prin-
 ple and inclination in themselves to rece-
 from thence? In like manner it is with the
 Earth. All the parts of it did, at the beginnin-
 and first creation of things by God, and st-
 doe, naturally and directly tend, not one
 from the four quarters, but from all and eve-
 imaginable part of the Circumference of
 Heavens, to the Center or middle part of
 World; and consequently their meeting (be-
 cause it is their proper and naturall place, a-
 from which they cannot of themselves, ne-
 so little, recede or decline) must there, a-
 about it eternally rest: I say must there et-
 nally rest and remain settled or still, with-
 motion or inclination to move one w-
 or other, untill wee doe assigne some extrin-
 cal Agent or Cause, so much superior in fo-
 to their naturall inclination, as to be able
 dislodg them and make them stir; which
 it should be the *levant Windes*, as some i-
 gine, truly seems to me a conceit lighter t-

the winde, and much unworthy of the judge-
 ment of him that, I think, first published it to
 the World: That such a soft and moderate
 gale, as those windes of themselves alwaies are,
 is not sufficient to remove a stone of a pound
 weight, if it lay in their way; and many times
 is not able to drive a Ship before it, with all the
 advantage of Sails, course of Waters, &c. that
 can be given it: (for it is no strange thing at
 sea, to heare that Ships are, now and then, be-
 calmed, and want winde upon the *Atlantick*
 and within the Tropiques.) I say, that such a
 moderate gale as those windes are, should be
 able to work such an effect against such an in-
 finite resistance as is in the whole body of the
 Earth, what man of common sense can believe
 it? This therefore being a demonstration
 of the stability and unmovable fixedness of
 the Earth in the middle of the World, of such
 evident, obvious, and unrevincible experience
 as it is; We think it cannot be sufficiently
 wondered at, why the World should seem so
 generally and so seriously to be taken with the
 eccentric and injudicious fancies of *Coperni-*
cus and *Galilaeus*, concerning the perpetual mo-
 tion which they imagine to be in the Earth, and
 that the Heavens or celestial Bodies stand still
 and

and move not at all. Fancies, not only contrary to common sense (so farre as sense may judge of the motion, rest, distance, and situation of Bodies, which certainly it may and ought to be in many cases, and such as doe particularly pertain to this question) contrary to the more generall and unanimous judgement of both ancient and modern Philosophers, contrary to the evidence of so many thousand demonstrations Mathematicall and Astronomical, which have been founded and held good in all ages, upon the contrary supposition, viz. That the Earth is the Center of the Universe and that, *secundum se totam*, it never moveth but contrary also unto Scripture, which refutes the opinion in a hundred places, reckoning the perpetuall motion of the Heavens, and the unmovable rest and stability of the Earth, among the *Magnalia Dei*, or the chief works of Divine Providence and Wisdome. The places are so obvious and frequent, that it seems scarce necessary to alledge them; yet the reader, if he please, may see *Psal.* 19. 5, 6. and 104. 19, 20. *Jos.* 10. 12, 13. 2 *Kings* 20. 9, 10, 11. *Psal.* 104. 5. and 119. 90. *Eccles.* 1. 5. which last is the testimony of *Solomon* himself, not only a great King, but as the Scriptures likewise testify of him 1 *Kings* 4. 29, 30, 31, 32, 33. a great Philosopher

philosopher, and one that understood the nature
 and constitution of the World better than any
 mere Philosopher before him, or since; which
 suppose no man will be so immodest as to de-
 ny. And though we acknowledge the Scrip-
 tures were not given principally to teach us a
 body of Naturall Philosophy, as they frequent-
 ly tell us; yet doubtless they were given to
 teach us truth, in whatsoever they teach us, and
 how to judge of the works of God, especially
 those great and more generall parts of the
 creation, which, by their obviousness and vi-
 sibility, were to be the subject of every mans
 serious meditation and wonder: Neither can
 we but presume, with some confidence, that the
 author of Scripture understood the frame and
 constitution of his own handiwork somewhat
 better than *Copernicus* or *Des Cartes*; and
 would, without all doubt, have made another
 manner of report of it, if the truth had been
 otherwise, or that it had been his divine plea-
 sure, that we should have otherwise judged of
 it. Admit therefore, that the Scripture *James*
1. 1. doth not speak so exactly of the Natures
 of things, but *more hominum*, as they say, and
 by way of *accomodation*, or fitting it self to the
 common judgment and apprehension of men,
 and consequently that it ought not to be al-
 ledged

ledged in questions purely philosophicall; contrary to the evidence of naturall reason and demonstration; yet certainly, where the testimony of Scripture is so frequent and emphatically assertive, as it is in many respects here and when the stile thereof is not contrary unto but consonant to the generall properties and principles of Nature (by which even philosophically we are to judge, and in other cases perpetually doe judge of Naturall things;) then we vouchsafe not both to speak and thinke according to the language of Scripture, we seem to bear but little respect to Scripture; and though the *sense* and *stile* of a writing be not always the one and same thing, yet in such case must not be every plausible imagination or phantasm that may possibly com in our mindes but very necessary, cogent, and undeniable demonstration indeed, that should induce us to dogmatize in any thing contrary to the authority of the sacred stile. But who ever saw any thing alledged by the Cartesians of this nature? What necessary, cleer, and evident demonstrations doe they propound, either against the motion of the Heavens, or for the motion of the Earth? what objections doe they make but learned men of the contrary opinion, doe as easily demonstrate to be fallacious and sophistical.

consisticall, and more easily answer than they
 can make them? Nay, for my part, 'tis
 more than I can yet observe, that they doe
 much pretend unto any such matter, viz. as to
 demonstrate either the necessity of their own
 system of the World, or the impossibility and
 inconsistency of the Ptolemaick or common
 system, with the principles of Nature and
 reason. All that they labour about is rather to
 shew the possibility of their own devise, and to
 concile the *Phaenomena* or appearances of
 heaven, and make them consistent with the
 motion of the Earth: which though they were
 able to doe, then I suppose they are, yet
 it would not follow, but that the other is like-
 wise as possible and consistent; and having the
 advantage of divine testimony and attestation
 beside, consequently it would but little
 justify some of them to dogmatize so freely in
 the point as they doe, contrary to the stile of
 sacred Scripture, and likewise to the judgement
 of some Ecclesiastical authority, that ought not
 to be slighted, before which *Galileus* himself
 was twice convinced of his error, and twice re-
 voked his opinion. See *Spondan. ad ann. Dom.*
1633. sect. 6.
 3. I confess the opinion of some English-
 men, viz. *Carpenter* in his *Geographic*, which
 susteineth

susteineth onely the circular and diurnal motion of the Earth upon its own Axis and Center, much less absurd than that of *Copernicium* and *h* gang: for it supposeth onely one uniform motion in that body; and if it could salve the *Phænomena* abovesaid & there could be any sufficient reason or cause assigned of such motion superior and prevalent, as it must be, unto that naturall resistance which is in the body of the Earth unto such motion, as hath been said, I should readily enough assent to it; but am very confident, neither the one nor the other can be affirmed with truth. Whereas the opinion of *Copernicium*, That the Sun is the Center of the Universe; that it standeth alwaies still; and that the Earth, like a Planet, moveth about him circularly betwixt the orbes, or Planetary circles of *Mars* and *Venus*, is lyable to infinite absurdities, contrary not only to the authority of sacred Scripture, but of common sense, common reason, and the naturall condition and propensity of the Earth it self. For first it maketh that Body, which of it self is most unwieldy, as I may say, and unapt for motion, and most naturally disposed to rest, the subject of the most rapid and accelerated motion, which they will acknowledge in the whole Universe, and this without assigning any proportionate and reasonable

not a variable cause thereof. It is very well known,
 that one of the chiefest reasons (I know not
 well whither I may not say *the only reason*) which
 they pretend against the motion of the Heavens
 is this, That the revolution of the superior
 spheres, especially of the *primum mobile*, must
 necessarily be more swift than can be supposed
 any naturall Body; which, though it seems
 very childish and weak conceit, considering
 the nature of those Bodies, and their aptitude
 to move; and likewise what power it is that
 first gave them, and still continues the impressi-
 on to it: yet against themselves it concludes very
 well, *viz.* that they ought not to assigne the
 same motion (I mean in proportion *the same*)
 to another Body in no proportion capable
 of it, at least not without assigning a more ne-
 cessary and evident cause of it than that of the
 first Indies. But men are come to a great height
 of confidence in their assertions, it seems now
 to sayes, and may well be pardoned such a petty
 oversight as this, when they blush not to su-
 perstition, deliberately and soberly as a man would
 think, that the least weight whatsoever, is able
 to overpoise the Earth, and that if but a Flie
 cast out of the aire lights upon it, the whole Ma-
 chine or Body of it shuggs, as it were: I mean,
 that it is *really moved therewith*, and that some
really

reall alteration is made in the site and position thereof, as to the other parts of the World. They that have the confidence to publish such Theorems as these to the World, I confess, may be permitted to say, the Windes, or any thing else lighter than the winde, are a sufficient cause, that the Earth circulates or turneth round once every day. Secondly, Because it makes one and the same continuat Body subject to so many different and contrary motions, at the same time : As first a diurnal motion upon its own Axis. Secondly, an annual motion, whereby it describes and correspondeth to the Signs of the Zodiack. And lastly a motion, which they call, of Declination, quite contrary to that upon the Center, or the motion of the Universe, and whereby the whole Axis or Diameter of the Earth is made to be movable, and not fixed. Absurdities, which in the motion of the Heavens, they know well enough, are easily saved by the supposition of Epicycles or lesser Orbes moving within the compass of the greater : which being, as is supposed, discontinue from the greater Orbe, under which they move, though carryed about with it by force of the diurnall revolution, yet may well be conceived to retain some peculiar motion of their own, different from that of the greater Orbe ;

just

It as a Flie or a Snaile upon a wheel, may be
 supposed to be whirled about with the wheel
 from East to West; and yet, at the same time,
 in a peculiar motion of its own, creep slowly
 quite contrary to the motion of the wheel,
 i. e. from West to East, or otherwise oblique-
 ly and traverse the wheel, viz. from North to
 South. And being also neither concentricall with
 the superior orbe, under which they move, nor
 with the Earth, but eccentricall and moving
 upon a different Axis and Center from them,
 it must needs follow, that the Planets or other
 stars assigned to such Orbs, and carried about
 by and with those Orbs in a motion retro-
 grade and different from that of the superior,
 should at different times, that is, at different
 periods or points of their revolution, appear
 diversly posited, in respect of the Earth, and
 of us that live upon it; I mean sometimes more
 distant and remote; sometimes neerer at hand;
 sometimes more verticall, and sometimes more
 declining; according, I say, as the Planet or
 Star is carried either to his *Augis* or highest
 point of exaltation in the Epicycle; or con-
 trariwise to his *Abssis*, or depression; and
 likewise according as either the condition of
 the Climate or the several seasons of the year,
 or some other provident intent of the wise

Author

Author of Nature doth require. For what purpose see the excellent and remarkable discourse, which Dr. Brown hath lib. cap. 5. of his *Pseudodox Epidem. edit.* upon the site and motion of the Sunne the Heavens. And though the Cartesians reject these Epicycles never so much, as fictitious and imaginary things, yet can it not be denyed, but that they are possible, and their supposition not contrary, but agreeable enough unto Nature and the quality of the Heavens. I say they are possible; which is more than can be said of many of their suppositions. And whosoever shall seriously consider, in other parts of the Universe, how much it pleaseth the Divine Wisdome, by the contrarietie and inequality that is in particulars, to ballance, as it were, and bear up the generall Harmony, Equality, and Concord of the whole, may in time perhaps, come to think them neither so improbable.

4. Others (as the Author of the Dialogues *de Mundo*) give I know not what *progressive motion* to the Earth, no more reconcileable with reason and the naturall propertie of the Earth, than the other; but rather seeming to add something to the former absurditie. I say, not reconcileable to the naturall propertie of the Earth

earth, which, by what hath been said in the be-
 ginning and many other sensible demonstrati-
 ons, doth necessarily place and settle it in the
 center and middle space of the World. For,
 not to repeat any thing that hath been spoken
 already) what other reason can be given, why
 a man, standing in any part of the Horizon, fix
 the Signes of the Zodiack will be seen of
 six, and the other six alwaies hid, but that the
 Earth is exactly, and at all times, in the mid'st
 of the World, or of the circumference of the
 Heavens? what reason can be given, why the
 Stars appear alwaies of the same magnitude
 if the aire be clear and equally disposed at the
 times of observation) whether in the verticall
 point or at East, West, or in whatsoever part
 of the Heavens they be observed, but that the
 parts of the Earth at all times keep the same
 distance from Heaven? what reason can be gi-
 ven, why that whensoever the two great Lights,
 the Sun and Moon, are diametrically oppo-
 site one to another in the Heavens, that is, the
 one full North, the other full South, or the one
 full East, the other full West, there alwaies
 happens an Eclypse of the Moon? and why
 the Moon never happens to be Eclipsed, but
 when she is so opposite to the Sun, but only be-
 cause the Earth is perpetually in the midst of
 the

the World, and by consequence in such opposition necessarily prohibits and hinders the reflexion of the Suns-light upon the Moon; I have no intention to enter a controverſie with any man, much leſs to pretend an exact refutation of their opinion, how erroneous ſoever. What I have ſpoken hitherto hath been only *obiter*, and by way of preamble to the diſcourſe that followeth; wherein, being to treat of ſuch a conſiderable and rich part of the World as *America* is, unknown to former ages, and to make report of ſome part of the great wealth and riches which divine Providence had, as it were treaſured and laid up therein, to be diſpenſed unto other parts of the World in his appointed time; I thought it not improper nor much amifs, by way of Introduction, to take notice of a diſpute ſo neerly concerning the principal ſubject of my diſcourſe, which is the Earth, or habitable World, and to ſpeak my minde freely therein. How neceſſary is it, and how much could I wiſh, for the reſpects I bear to ſome Perſons in the world, that men profeſſing Religion and due reverence to the ſacred Writings, would oftentimes remember one excellent document and adviſe therein, recorded by the Perſon of that great Apoſtle and Doctor of the *Gentiles* *St. Paul*, which is *ſapere ad ſobrietatem*, to uſe our

our Learning and all acquired Endowments
 liberly and with due respect unto the dictates
 of Religion ; knowing this, that the minde of
 man is otherwise, of it self, an abyss of inordi-
 nate and irregular cogitations, to which, if we
 ourselves set not bounds many times, by re-
 sistent and voluntary acquiescence in such
 vices as divine Authority any way com-
 mands unto us, but follow the swing of na-
 tural curiosity, and our fine pleasing specula-
 tions to the utmost, we may in time come to
 misse our selves out of the right way, and
 more apt to beleeve any thing, than what is
 good and true.

That which compleateth the Globe, and
 covereth the body of the Earth more entirely
 than any other, is the Element of Waters ; which is a
 substance compounded, as it were, and consi-
 steth of Earth and Aire mixed together, yet in
 such a proportion, as that the Substance of the
 Earth doth much predominate in the compo-
 sition. From hence it followeth, that the ele-
 ment of Water must retain the natural pro-
 perty of the Earth, which is, to *move down-*
ward in a direct line toward the Center of the
 world, as we see perpetually that it doth in
 any little drop of water, which divides the
 earth, and makes it self a direct passage through

it towards the Earth and Center of the World and likewise it must retain (though in a weaker and lesser degree) the propertie of the Air which is to be diffusive and perpetually spreading it self, and unapt to be kept together by some extrinsecal boundary or body that contains it. From the first of these, viz. the predominancy and propertie of the Earth in the Element of Water, it follows that the Water must naturally cleave to the Earth, be naturally united with it, and hardly, that is, not otherwise than by force separated from it. So that there is no feare that the waters of the lower Hemisphere, or of the Antipodes should fall back into the concave of the Heavens, as, upon our first thoughts of it, we are commonly apt to imagine; nor yet that any of the People or other living Creatures in that part of the World, should have the like mischance. For, upon whatsoever part of the *Superficies* or Surface of the Earth they live and move, they are fastened and glued, as I may say to it by this natural & inbred propertie of the Earth, which is predominant in their constitution, viz. to move downward, and incline to the Center, and which we see perpetually take place in them, whensoever their animal and voluntary motions cease. From the second,

s natural fluxilitie and diffusiveness it fol-
 ws, that the water must be apt to insinuate
 and lodg it self in all such cavities and recep-
 tacles, whether upon the Surface or more
 within the bowels of the Earth, as the divine
 providence hath prepared for it : and also that
 wheresoever it findeth a free passage, or chan-
 nel, and that it is not stopt or kept in with
 banks or bounds, it should be naturally and
 continually flowing or in motion, as the Aire
 And from both it appears, how apt the wa-
 ter of it self is to imbrace the Earth on all parts,
 and to constitute one common Globe or
 Body with it. The Cartesians, men of
 discerning and searching capacities as they
 some thinks, if they would, might more ea-
 sily finde some probable reason from hence, of
 this notable effect in Nature, which hath so
 long exercised their Speculations, viz. of the
 rising and flowing of the Sea, without being
 owing to a necessity of unsettling and shaking
 the foundation of all things, which the wisdom
 of God hath so cleerely laid in and upon the
 earth; and without perverting the glorious and
 regular sufficiently to be admired System and
 order of the World, with such presumption
 as they doe. Without doubt the influence of
 Celestiall Bodies doe much concur to this

effect, by their attenuating and rarefying the substance of that Element ; and likewise the Windes, especially those which are natural and constant to the respective Climates of the World : Nor doe I think it an effect, that can be attributed unto any particular, uniform, single cause whatsoever ; so as they that stretch their wits, and labor to attribute it to any single cause, I fear labour in vain. But yet, under favour, and with submission to better judgment, I suppose the principal and more general cause, which disposeth the element of Waters to such an effect, may be that vertue or quality which we are now discoursing upon, viz. its natural fluxility and aptness to be perpetually running and in motion, where it hath a convenient channel wherein to flow, and wherby to empty it self into another place. For, as we said, naturally it is inconsistent to be at rest, or with it self alone ; nor is there any other cause required to make it move or flow, but only a way open and plain : So that if it were certain (as I think most Cosmographers hold it for very probable) that there were a channel at the North for the waters of *Mare del Zucro* or the western Ocean, to pass into the Atlantick, as there is at the South for the waters of the Atlantick to pass into *Mare del Zucro* (tho

ould think without any more adoe, that what
 call the Tyde, that is, the excreſcency of the
 waters in narrow Seas, Creeks and Rivers
 the Sea (for in the main Ocean 'tis com-
 ly ſaid there is little or noe Tyde obser-
) were nothing elſe but an effect of that
 and general flood, by which the waters
 one Hemisphere doe continually flow in-
 the other, according to the courſe and mo-
 of the ſuperior World, from which, be-
 their natural proclivity and aptneſs unto
 tion they doe conſtantly receive an acceſſo-
 influence and impreſſion to move ; and
 ſuch general flood, or courſe of the Waters
 of one Hemisphere into another, as it paſ-
 along the ſeveral coaſts of the World, ne-
 arily putteth in abundance of waters into
 narrow Seas, Creeks, and other receptacles
 conveniently to receive it : and that the
 is nothing elſe but the reſels of the ſame
 waters, retiring and withdrawing themſelves
 they muſt neceſſarily doe) to follow the
 general flood, when it is gone by. But becauſe
 paſſage or entercourſe of the Waters of
 upper and lower Hemisphere, by the
 north, is not to me ſo evident, I leave the
 whole matter as a Problem, and Subject of
 further meditation to thoſe that are willing to
 think

think upon and study the great works of divine Providence with modesty and religious sobriety : not doubting, but that sufficient reason may be found otherwise of this admirable effect, from the natural property and inclination of the Water (as hath been said) to be always moving and flowing one way or other from its aptitude likewise to receive impulse or an impression to move from all other things ; from the natural site and position of the parts of the Earth, in the several quarters of the World, by which it floweth ; and from diverse other causes, that possibly might be observed, if we did apply our selves to take notice of them as we ought.

6. The general Globe, or whole body of the Earths circumference, is divided by the Equinoctial line, into two great and equal Hemispheres, or half parts, which they call the upper and lower Hemisphere ; and sometime the Northern and Southern, because they lie upon the North and South side of the line that runneth betwixt them and divides them one from another : And by the Meridian (commonly caled the Meridian of the World) into two other, which they call the Eastern and the Western for the same reason. It containeth four general quarters, or known habitable parts

ts, which are *Europe, Asia, Africa*, and *America*; the three first whereof, viz. *Europe, Asia*, and *Africa* possess and take up the *Eastern Hemisphere*, or that half part of the *Globe* which lyeth Eastward of the Meridian. In the *Western Hemisphere* there is not much discovered, but onely the land of *America* and the Islands thereto belonging, which we are now to speak.

CHAP. II.

America in particular, and of its first discovery by Christopher Columbus, Americus Vesputius, and others.

I Shal not detain the Reader with any long dispute, whether this great part of the *World*, which we call *America*, were known to the *Ancients*, or not; seeing the *antient Geographers*, as *Ptolomy, Strabo*, and others, make no mention of it in their Books: This is certain, that if ever there were any knowledge of it, as some suppose there might be, and that particularly in the dayes of King *Solomon*, yet through an absolute discontinuance of *Traffique and Commerce* betwixt

those Parts and such other Nations of the world, as have left us any reports, or history of former times, that knowledg was long since so utterly extinct and forgotten, as if it had never been. As for the Text of Scripture *2 Chron. 3. 6.* which is sometimes alledged where the Gold, which King Solomon used about the Temple, is said to be *Gold of Parvaim* and which the favourers of the affirmative opinion, interpret of the Country of *Peru America* : though some learned men insist upon it, yet to others it seems rather a plausible conjecture, than a good argument ; and who soever considers how unlikely it is, that a Country once famously known and sought after upon such an occasion, should ever come to be unknown, and, as it were, lost in the world : or that Commerce and Traffique, once held and settled between Nations, upon a commodity so much esteemed and desired by men, as gold is, should ever come to be totally discontinued with all Nations, and to suffer lapse beyond all memory of men and ages ; say, who soever considers this, I think in reason he should acknowledge, that the negative opinion is more probable ; and that we doe but bring right to the memorie of *Columbus*, and those other brave men, his followers, still to account themselves

of the first discoverers of this *new World*,
 is commonly called ; and in that quality to
 say a few words of them, before we proceed
 to it further.

Christopher Columbus was by Nation an
 Italian, born, as it is said, at *Nervi* in the terri-
 tory of the Common-wealth of *Genoa*; who ha-
 ving by his education and long practise at Sea,
 attained to a great skill in the Art of Navigati-
 on, and in all Maritim affairs, was at this time
 infinitely famous and well accepted, by reason
 of his good abilities, to most of the Princes of
 Christendome ; being well known in the
 Courts of *England*, *Spain*, *Portugall*, and o-
 thers ; and being also a good Mathematician,
 observing the daily course of the Sunne,
 came at last to a resolution with himself, that
 there must needs be yet some other
 World, unknown to us, to whom that glori-
 ous Planet dispensed the benefit of his raies,
 during his absence from our Hemisphere : be-
 ing likewise surprised with an intense desire of
 discovering that presumed World, and of
 reaching out where it lay, and what kinde of
 People it had. The French are not willing
 that the glorie of this enterprize should be so
 entirely attributed to *Columbus* ; *Thuanus*, a
 brave & good Author positively affirming, that
 Monsieur

Mounſieur Betoncourt, a French man, who discovered the *Azores* or *Tercera* Islands they call them, and afterwards ſold them the Spaniards, gave him ſome information of the Country, and did little leſs than put upon the deſigne. Others ſpeak of a certain Pilot. who had been wrackt upon ſome of the very Coaſts of *America*, with whom *Columbus* had the good fortune to be acquainted, and learn much from him : That *Martin Vincent* his Brother in Law by the marriage of *Wifes* Siſter (being himſelf alſo a man much uſed to the Sea) had aſſured him, that he was once by a ſtorm, carried more then 450 leagues weſtward of the Cape of *St. Vincent* upon the Coaſt of *Africk*, and that he there met with certain great logs or pieces of Timber floating upon the Sea, ſuch as he could not but beleieve were driven thither from ſome weſtern Country or Iſlands, lying further in the Main. That the Inhabitants of the *Azores* or *Tercera* Iſlands, had told him, that upon the Coaſts of *Gracyoſa*, *Fayal*, and *Flora* Iſlands, there had been lately caſt certain Pictures of *India*, and certain dead men, of countenance and ſtature much differing from the proportion of any other known Nations ; and alſo likewise certain weather-driven Canoes of

Boats, which they knew were used by
 but Indians, or by some other unknown
 Nations, which must lye westward of
 All which, whether it were true or false,
 ers not much : For whatsoever the first
 ements and encouragements were, which
ambus had towards the enterprize, 'tis cer-
 he was the first that propounded it to the
 stian World, and prosecuted his proposi-
 with such a constancy and magnanimous
 ution, notwithstanding the many difficul-
 and oppositions which for a long time he
 with, as may easily argue something more
 the hand or counsel of man in the busi-
 both supporting and conducting him in

For not being able out of his private for-
 to furnish himself out upon such a design,
 as forced to have recourse to certain Chri-
 Princes and States, and to desire their assi-
 : some of wch rejected his propositions as
 ous and vain; to wit the State of *Genoa*,
 hom, as being his native Country, he first
 yed himself. In the Court of *Portugall*,
 where he had married a wife, and by that
 ns was become free Denizen and a Sub-
 of that Crown, he was maligned and hin-
 d of his purpose out of envy, by some of
 the

the Councell very powerfull with that King who although they would not seem to receive his proposition, yet privately, & under pretence of a voyage onely to *Cape Verde*, themselves sent out a Carvell, with instructions to make what discoveries they could of any Land westward. But their project had no great success: the Carvell after much fowl weather and hardship endured, making a difficult return home and discovering nothing. Whereupon he replyeth himself to the King of *England*, who was at that time *Henry* the seventh, a Prince that loved treasure well enough, but cared not to hazard much to gain it; and all that *Columbus* could promise as yet upon that point was onely, that he would discover a shorter way to the *East Indies*, whereby Christian Princes might procure themselves the wealth of those rich Countries already known, in a shorter time, and at far less charges than hitherto they had been able to doe. But with through the parcimony of this Prince, and cold attention to the business when it was first propounded to him; and what through the misfortunes which his Brother *Bartholomew Columbus*, met withall in his way to *England*, which somewhat hindred his addresses to the King, there was no answer given, till it was re-

and that *Columbus* had engaged his ser-
 vants into *Ferdinand* King of *Castile*; who at
 length, viz. after a matter of six or seven years
 of resistance and delays, had yielded to his re-
 quest, at the earnest entreaty of the Queen
Isabella, and of the Cardinal *Mendoza* Arch-
 bishop of *Toledo*. It is said, that the Queen
 became so zealous and earnestly affected
 to the business, as 'tis supposed, upon some
 principles of Religion, suggested to her by a
 pious man, *Fernando de Talavera* her Con-
 fessor, that she pawned many of her own Jew-
 els to help to furnish him out: and 'tis certain,
 that the Treasure of *Castile* was never more ex-
 hausted than it was at that time, through a long
 chargeable warre with the Moors, which
 was not quite ended when *Columbus* received
 his Commission: So that many humane rea-
 sons might seem to have excused that King
 in undertaking any new charge, at that time
 especially, had it not been the will of divine
 providence to have that work goe forward,
 and to recompense the liberality and piety of
 these Princes with such an infinite advantage
 both of wealth and honour, by the means of
 this man.

4. On Friday the third of *August* 1492, he
 set out from *Palos*, a Port Town of *Andalusia*,
 with

with three Carvels, whereof the Admirall *Sancta Maria*, was commanded by himself; the Vice-Admirall *Pinta*, commanded by Captain *Martin Pincon*; and the *Ninna*, commanded by Captain *Vincent Yannez Pincon*, having aboard in all of them together about 120 men, and among them *Americus Vesputius* for one. On the eleventh of *August* following they had sight of the *Canary Islands*, and sailing forwards, on the 16th day they met with certain quantities of long grass floating upon the water, and upon one of them a Grass-hopper alive; which grass, as it increased daily more and more for some time, so it put them in continual hopes every day of coming to some Land. Nevertheless they sailed *August* quite out, the whole Moneth of *September* following, and some part of *October*, without kenning of any land; which troubled them extreemly; insomuch that his company began to mutiny desperately, and to threaten their Admiral, that they would throw him overboard, unless he would presently return for *Spain*; swearing they were abus'd, and that he should not make himself a great Lord, as he intended, with the perill of their lives. They alledged moreover, that the Ships were spent and grown so leaky, that they thought they would

would scarce endure the Seas so long, as to carry them safely home again. *Columbus* was much afflicted with this behaviour and resolution of his Souldiers, yet endeavored to pacify and draw them on, as much as he could, with good words, and to animate them still with hopes of success: but at length, seeing nothing else could prevail with them, much against his will, he made them a promise, that if within three dayes they descryed not Land, he would forthwith return for *Spain*. This was on the 10th of *October*; and the very night following they discovered the Island *Guanahani*, one of the *Leucaia* Islands, which lye together in the Gulfe of *America*, called afterwards by *Columbus* *St. Salvador*. This was a great rejoicing to them all, especially to *Columbus*, who went on shore; and having sung the *Te Deum* on his knees, with tears in his eyes, he erected a Cross and took possession of the Island in the name of the Catholique Kings *Ferdinand* and *Isabella*, all the Spaniards that were with him presently (according to his Patent) acknowledging him Viceroy of the Countrey. There were standing by some few of the Natives, wondring to see men cloathed and so accoutred as the Spaniards were, themselves being for the most part naked, and onely painted upon their bodies,

bodies, with white, black, red, and other colours as their fancie lead them. In their nostrils and upon their lips some of them had rings of gold pendant, as it were, in the way of ornament ; which the Spaniards quickly espied : and inquiring of them by signes, where they had such fine things, they came to understand, that a certain King of that Country, who lived a great way further toward the South, had abundance of it. This news pleased them so well, that they made no long stay there, but on the 15th of *October* they set Sail, and fell upon another of those Islands seven or eight leagues distant from this, which they called *la Concepcion* ; from thence upon the 17th they came to the Island *Fernandina* ; and from thence to *Cuba* : *Columbus* not suffering his men in any of these places, to take ought from the Natives against their will, or without giving them something for it, which they seemed to desire. At *Cuba* he found that the Natives had some Towns and Villages, which they inhabited, and were so ordered, that in fifty or threescore houses sometimes 2000 or 1500 people of Men, Women, and Children, were contained, according to the custome of the Country, that all People of the same Linage or Kindred lived together in one house : and their
houses

houses being built square, in the fashion of a Court, with long and large sides, though but low and of a lamentable Architecture, easily contained them all.

5. From hence they sailed to *Hispaniola*, where they had sight of the King of the Country, named *Guanagari*, who received him and his company with much shew of kindness, presenting him with the Fruits and other Commodities of the Country; and, which was better than all the rest, giving them more certain information of those golden Provinces, which were afterwards discovered in the main Land; for as yet they were but upon Islands, and had not touched or seen any part of the Continent of *America*. *Columbus* was so well satisfied with the intelligence which he had gained, that he resolved to return for *Spain*, and to make report of his Adventures to the King; whereunto the condition of his Ships, want of some necessary Provisions to proceed further, together with some other accidents, did also induce him. For, as it commonly happens in the affairs of this World, unanimity and friendship lasteth not long among men, especially where self-love and private interest once make a breach, his Vice-Admiral *Pincon*, perceiving the voyage likely to be profitable,

had by this time separated himself from *Columbus*, upon pretence of some offence taken, but really out of hopes to advance his Fortunes better by going apart by himself; which, though it were derogatorie to his Commission and the command which he had over him, as Admirall, yet *Columbus* was content to beare with it, for the better carrying on of their common design; so they were reconciled: And having built the Fort of *Narividad* in *Hispaniola*, for the guard of some Spaniards that were to be left there, *Columbus* set sail for *Spain* on Friday the fourth of *January*, having first charged his men to shew all due respect to the King of the Country, and not to wrong the Natives. But how they did observe his charge, doth not so well appear; For the men are said to be murder'd, all of them, by the Natives, during the absence of *Columbus*: and this is thought to have been some occasion, not onely of the Warre, which the Spaniards made afterwards upon the Natives, but of that excessive severity and cruelty, which for a long time together they used towards them. In his return he discovered a great part more of the coasts of *Hispaniola*, and gave names to diverse Capes and Harbors, by which he passed; But drawing neer home, he suffered two such terrible

rible storms, upon the coasts of *Spain*, as had well nigh buried him and all his hopes in the bottome of the Sea. By reason whereof, and for the performance of some vows, which he had made in his distress, he went on Land, upon some part of the Kingdom of *Portugall*; which he thought he might safely doe: But it proved otherwise. For the same of his voyage being blown home before him, there was in the Court of *Portugall* no little matter of offence conceived against him, That he, being a Subject of that Crown (as we have said he was by the right of his Wife) should doe such an eminent service, without leave, to a forraign Prince, and one that perhaps, was little better than an Enemy. This was chiefly through the instigation of some malevolent persons about the King: and although the suggestion were altogether injurious and groundless, *Columbus* having first offered his service to that King, and been refused, yet it prevailed so farre, that *Columbus* was apprehended and sent up to *Lisbon*. But the King himself seeing him, contrary to the expectation and endeavours of some about him, used him with much respect and kindness; and after some short time, having had that discourse with him, concerning his voyage and adventures, that he desired, he let

him freely pass to the Court of *Castile*. Where he was received with a welcome answerable to the success of his endeavours, and to the advantage which they promised that Crown; and quickly furnished out again with more and better Ships, wherein he made several and successfull voyages, still discovering more and more of this new World which he had found, and asserting the several Provinces where he came, to the Crown of *Castile*. And although towards his latter end, through the procurement of some enemies which he had at Court, whose envy, like a dark shadow, perpetually attended the lustre of his brave actions, he suffered some Eclipse for a time in his honour and reputation, upon occasion of a Rebellion, which one *Roldano Ximenez*, a seditious turbulent fellow, and one that had been once his Servant, and advanced by him, had begun to raise in the *West-Indies*; and that *Bobadilla* was sent to be Governor of *Hispaniola*, in his stead: yet being come to Court, though in quality of a Prisoner, and, as some say, in chains, the remembrance and sense of his former merits, together with his own approved honestie and vertue, soon dissipated those clouds of jealousy and suspicion, which were gathered against him; and the Catholique Kings look'd favorably

rably upon him, renewed and confirmed his former Authority and priviledges, viz. of Admirall of those Western Seas, (which Office his Sonne and Nephew after him a long time enjoyed) created him Duke *De la vega* in the Island of *Jamaica*, being a Town which himself had built: So that he both lived and dyed with Honor; being a man, as 'tis credibly reported of him by diverse Authors, of exemplary Piety and Vertue; very religious and devout towards God; just, affable, and courteous towards Men; temperate and abstentious in all things; and in a word, such a man (as Mr. *Purchas* truly acknowledgeth of him) as God had made a fit instrument for so great a work, viz. as was the discovery of so many great, rich, fertile, and fair Countries, as were formerly unknown to the Christian World; being no less celebrated by the Spanish Writers, *Oviedo*, *Herrera*, and others, for his magnanimity, courage, wisdom, and admirable resolution in his undertakings.

6. Second to *Columbus*, in the glorie of this grand and successfull enterprize of discovering the new World, was *Americus Vesputius*, a Florentine; who especially in the service at the charge of *Emanuel*, King of *Portugall*, undertook the business. He had been

one of *Columbus* his companions in the first expedition, and consequently did now but trace the way which *Columbus* had before shewed him; yet had he this happiness and honour above his Predecessor, *viz.* to give name unto the Country discovered; the whole Continent of the new World being ever since generally called *America* from him. This man, as was said, having made several voyages to *America*, partly with *Columbus*, and partly by himself, in the service of King *Ferdinand*, and by them discovered much of the Continent of *America* on this side the Equator, in the year 1502 *Emanuel*, King of *Portugall*, took him into his service. Under whom setting out of *Lisbon* with his companions, and a competent number of Ships, they sailed up to the Equator; and having crossed the line, discovered the coasts of *Guiana* and *Brazil*, beyond the Tropique of *Capicorne* to 32 degrees of Southern latitude; where having stayed some time, and taken possession of the Country after their usual formalities, they held on their course beyond the River of *Plate*, unto 52 degrees, as *Munster* in his *Cosmographie* reporteth; which is accounted to be full the height of the Streites. But here being taken with foul weather, and their Ships much spent and impaired

impaired by the Stormes, they were forced to return homeward by the coast of *Afrique*. In the year following, viz. 1503, he attempted another voyage, directing his course for *Melch* or *Insula Real*, in the Country of *Brasil*; but having passed *Cape Verde* and *Sierra Lione*, upon the coast of *Guinea*, by a great misfortune, the Ship which carried their chief Provisions was sunk, and 300 Barrels or Hogheads of Victuals and other necessary Provisions for the company, was utterly lost: by which disaster being forced again to turn homeward, how long he lived, or what expeditions he made after this, it doth not appear.

7. I ought not altogether to forget Sir *Sebastian Cabot*, a Venetian Gentleman, yet born and living in *England*; who likewise about this time, viz. in the year 1496, at the charge of *Henry* the seventh, King of *England*, set out with two Carvels, for the discovery of a North-west passage to *Cathay* and the *East-Indies*, according to the design which *Columbus* had first suggested to him. In pursuit whereof, he is reported to have sailed to 67 degrees of Northern latitude upon the coast of *America*; but finding the Land still to bear Eastward, which was contrarie to his purpose,

he turned sail and coasted down Southward as farre as *Florida*, where with the usual ceremonies, he took possession of several places, in the name of the King of *England*, as we shall further see in the particular description of the Continent. In the way he discovered the Islands *Baccalos*, or. of Cod-fish; so named from the great aboundance of that kinde of Fish which they met withall upon the coasts. They lie 25 leagues into the Sea over against *Cape Rays* of New-found land; where the English have an extraordinary good Trade for Fishing, and also many other rich Commodities. But being forced at length to return home again for want of Victuals, his business, by reason of Warres which we had then with *Scotland*, was wholly laid aside, to the great prejudice of the English Nation, who in all probability might have made themselves quarter-Masters at least with the Spaniard in the wealthiest parts and Provinces of *America*, if the business had been well followed. Sir *Sebastian* himself went immediatly thereupon into *Spain*: and though he returned again into *England*, and was graced by the King with some titular dignity, viz. of Grand Pilot of *England*, and a pension; yet seeing his design was never revived to effect, I shall forbear to
 speak

speak further of him : as likewise I shall
 doe concerning *Ferdinand Magellan* a Portu-
 ghese ; whose name, although it be deservedly
 famous in the History and affairs of the new
 World, and that he had the happiness to dis-
 cover what so many before him had sought,
 but could not finde, namely a passage to the
East-Indies by the South Sea and the coast of
America, called therefore from him ever since
Magellans Streits : yet because his business
 chiefly was to discover, and not to conquer ;
 and that his design upon the Continent failed,
 which was to have planted a Colonie of Spa-
 niards in the middle and narrowest part of the
 Streits, thereby to have secured the Streits to
 himselfe, and prohibited the passage to all
 Strangers, it may suffice to remember him in
 some other place, that is, in the description of
 that part of the Continent which lyeth upon
 those Streits.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Voyage to America ; or the ordinary course of Navigation, which the Spaniards commonly hold, to and from the West-Indies.

1. **T**He English Nation have long since bin acquainted with the waies to the *West-Indies* reasonably well, as appears by the many brave exploits gallantly attempted, and no less stoutly and successfully performed by them in those parts, both at Sea and Land ; some of which I shall not altogether forget to mention in due place. So that this Chapter may seem not so necessarie. Nevertheless for the satisfaction of those, who are never likely to see *America* otherwise then in a Map, nor to understand the affairs of that rich part of the World, but by such reports and relations as this, I think it not altogether inconvenient to speak a few words of the particular voyage, or course held by Sea, to and from *America*, called by the Spaniards commonly *Carrera de las Indias*.

2. Their course is wholly Westward ; and they reckon commonly from *Sevill* in *Andalu-*

zia, which is a Province of old Spain to St. John D'ullua, a famous and much frequented Port of the Province of New Spain in America, about 1700 leagues, after the Spanish measure, which is thrice so much of Italian or common miles; and with favorable windes they doe ordinarily dispatch it in two moneths and an half. To *Nambré de bios*, or *Porto bello*, in the Island of *Hispaniola*, they reckon 1400 leagues, and doe usually make their voyage in two moneths. They set out commonly from *St. Lucar*, which is the Port, as it were, to *Sevill*; or else from *Palos*, a Sea Town in the same Province with *Sevill*, & not many miles distant from *St. Lucar*, Westward; and hold their course directly for the *Canaries*, which are certain Islands towards the coasts of *Africk*, under the dominion of the King of Spain, well known for the rich Wines yearly transported thence. They lye about 200 leagues distant from Spain, and the Ships arrive at them commonly in eight or ten daies, if nothing hinder, making their course through the Bay or Gulf *De la yegua*, as they call it, from the abundance of Mares which they were transporting into America, and were forced thereabouts, by a storm, to cast over board. It is counted the most difficult

passage

passage betwixt *Spain* and the *West-Indies*,
 especially in the Winter-time, being then for
 the most part dangerously infested with vio-
 lent and contrary windes. At these Islands the
 Spaniards ordinarily victuall and supply them-
 selves with necessaries, the Countrey being rich
 and affording all things requisite for their
 journey plentifully, especially that called *Pal-
 ma*, where they use most commonly to touch
 and furnish themselves. From hence they set
 sail for *America*, by the Islands of *Cape Verde*,
 which lye in the Atlantick Ocean, a few de-
 grees within the Tropiques, toward the coast
 of *Africk*: And hither, for the most part, they
 have an easie and certain course, seldom wan-
 ging some favorable winde or other to bring
 them within the Tropiques, or Torrid Zone,
 as 'tis commonly called: and being there, they
 have constant windes forward, which they call
The Brises or Levant-windes. These are cer-
 tain Easterly windes, which continually blow
 within the Tropiques, on both sides of the
 Equator, never failing; and in the space of
 fourteen or fifteen daies, doe carry the Ships
 within sight of the Northern Islands, as they
 at the *West-Indies* call them; which are, as it
 were, the Suburbs of the New World,
 lying thick scattered upon the coast of
America

America, in the Atlantick or North Sea.

3. The first which they commonly discover, are some of the *Caribee* Islands, lying toward the coast of *Paria*, viz. *Deffenda*, *Dominica*, *Guadalupe*; at which last they alwaies come to Anchor, and refresh themselves both going and coming; and from hence disperse themselves to the several parts and Ports of *America*, for which they are bound. Those that goe for *New-Spain*, take the right hand way towards the Island *Hispaniola*; and having discovered the Cape *St. Anthony*, which is a foreland or Promontorie, in the furthest and most Westerly parts of *Cuba*, they sail in sight of the Islands both of *St. John de Portorico*, and also of *Hispaniola*; of which last they leave the Port or Citty of *St. Domingo* at a distance of two or three leagues off at Sea, and hold their course betwixt the Islands of *Cuba* and *Jamaica*, till they attain *St. John D'allua*, or *Vera Cruz*, in the Province of *New Spain*. This passage, viz. from the Islands *Deffenda* and *Guadalupe*, to *St. John D'allua* is reckoned to be little less than 500 leagues; and by reason of so many Islands, great and small, which lie in their way, and cause the Seas to be much subject to contrary windes, it is counted a passage of no little difficultie; and not to be attempted

temped, as *Herrera* saith, without a very skillfull Pilot, and that in the day time, with the favour of a good winde and a full Sea; in respect whereof they commonly make it twenty daies passage, and are glad if they can reach it within that time. Those that goe for the Main Land, as they call it, or *Castella del oro*, have a passage of 400 leagues from *Guadalupe* above-said. These take the left-hand way; and having discovered the high Mountain of *Tayrone*, which is as a *Pharos* or generall Land-mark for such as sail upon that coast: they touch at *Cartagena*, a famous and well-seated Port and City of that Province; and from thence passe on to *Nombre de Dios*, or *Porto-Bello*, from which places they convey all their Merchandise by Land unto *Panama*, which is not above eighteen or twenty miles distant, and lyeth upon the South Sea: where they are Shipt again; and from thence by Sea conveyed to all the parts of the Province of *Peru*. They that goe to *Honduras* and the Province of *Guatemala*, keep company with them that goe for *New-Spain*, till they discover *Cape Tiburon*, which is the first point of *Hispaniola* Westward, where they leave them, and run along upon the North-side of the Island *Jamaica*, unto the point of *Negrillo*: Then they put to Sea, and seek

seek the Cape called *Cameron*, which is at the entrance of the gulf and Province of *Handuras*; from whence sailing fourteen or fifteen leagues Westward, they come to Anchor at *Truxillo*, upon the River *Haguara*, which runneth into the said Gulf, and unlade their Merchandise, so much of it as is intended for those parts : the rest they carry further up the Gulf to *Porto de Cavallos*, or *St. Thomas de Castile*; and from thence along the coast into the Province of *Guatimala*.

4. The best and most usual time for an outward voyage, that is from *Spain* to *America*, is about the Spring, viz. from the latter end of *March* to the beginning of *May*; for then commonly they make their voyage in due time, and come well thither. If they stay longer, so as that the Moneth of *August* be spent before they reach the Islands, it is more difficult, and they are usually taken with the *Hurricanes*, as they call them, which are certain violent and contrary windes that doe terribly infest the Atlantick and Indian Seas all winter long, from *September* to *March*. And likewise in their return homewards they observe the same time of the yeere there, viz. about *May* and *June* the ships that are to return for *Spain*, from all parts of the continent of *America* bend their
course

course for *Havana*, in the Island of *Cuba* which is the place of their general Rendezvous where they are all to meet, and to stay one for another till the whole Fleet, especially both of Convoy and Treasure be come in. Those from the main land, set saile commonly in *May* from *Porto Bello*, laden with all the wealth of *Peru*, and whatsoever else comes by the South Sea, which is not feldome very much from the *Philippine* Islands and the east *Indies*, and at *Carthagina* take in more, brought thither from all parts on that side the continent, especially out of the new kingdome of *Granada*, as they call it. Sayling from *Carthagena* they avoid the coast of *Veragua* what they can, by reason that the Current, which falleth out of the Ocean into that Gulfe, cometh so strongly upon them, that they would never beare up against it, at least not without much difficulty and danger; So that they are forced to seek the Cape Saint *Anthony*, which, as we said, was the most westerly point of the Island *Cuba*, at which place the ships from *Honduras* doe also touch, and so they saile together a matter of fifty leagues eastward, till they come to *Havana*. The ships from new *Spain* beare up Northward as far as the Sound or Bay called *Las Tortugas*, which are certain

certain Islands lying upon the coast of *Florida*, and so fetch a compasse, as it were, of little lesse then three hundred leagues, before they come to *Havana*. The reason of this course is, because the American Seas, especially neere upon the coast, are frequently subject to calms, so as the ships oftentimes want winde to sayle with; and therefore to gain, or assure themselves as much as may be of a convenient wind, they are forced to steere thus far Northward; from whence, that is, from the Islands *Tortugas*, they have a short and easie cut of a few leagues over to *Havana*.

5. When the ships are all met in the Port of *Havana*, they presently set sayle for *Spain* through the Streites of *Bahama*, and by some of the *Lucaina* Islands; not now in a direct course East-ward, as they came in from the East, but in a greater altitude and more Northerly. The reason hereof is, because the Bries or Easterly winds, which, as we said, doe constantly blow all within the Tropiques, or Torrid zone, doe hinder their passage East-ward, and force them to seeké their course higher, that is, somewhere without the Tropiques and more towards the North, at least to twenty three or twenty foure degrees of altitude, where they finde Westerly windes com-

E

monly,

monly, which carry them homewards as far as the *Azores* or *Tercera* Islands; and the farther they goe from the Line, the more ordinary and certain those windes are, and more fit to make their return; for as much as blowing from the South and south-west, they carry them directly East and North-east, as their voyage lyeth; which is also the reason why the return which the ships make from *America*, or any of those western Islands, is usually more difficult, longer and less certain than when they goe out; because, as hath been said, in their going out, when they are once passed the *Canarie* Islands and got within the Tropiques (which they usually doe in four or five dayes sayling, if the windes favor them) they have constantly there an Easterly winde, which carries them with full Sayles upon the Islands of *America*: whereas in their return, beside the uncertainty of the windes by which they sayle, they are forced to seek a height, as they call it, that is, to fetch a compass Northwards sometimes more then three or four hundred leagues to gaine a convenient winde. These *Azores* or *Tercera* Islands lie in the Atlantick Ocean, betweene thirty seven and fourty degrees of northern Latitude, and are reckoned to be about soure hundred leagues

leagues distant from England; at which when the ships have touched, and supplied themselves with such necessaries as they want, which commonly they doe at the *Forcers* Islands, but never stay to goe on shore, they set saile from thence directly for Saint *Lazar* or *Cadie*; which, when the coast of *Portugall* was free for them, and that they might come up securely with the Cape Saint *Vincent*, they usually reached in fourteene or fifteene dayes; but now of late, by reason of the *Warres*, and the revolt of that Nation from the Spaniard, they doe a little decline that coast, and consequently come in some few dayes later than ordinary.

CHAP. IIII.

Of some particular Adventures made by the English into the parts of America; especially those of Sir Francis Drake, Sir Thomas Cavendish, the Lord Admirall Clifford and others, which are briefly related.

BY what hath beene said in the precedent Chapter, the English will in part perceive how the voyage to the west Indies is

commonly made, where the chiefe difficulty or danger of it is, and how avoyded : what may seeme wanting to their more perfect information shall be supplied in the particular description of the severall places, Ports and Roades for shipping, which belong to the respective Provinces. At present for the entertainment of the Reader, and to performe an office of due respect unto the memorie of some brave men of our Nation, who have formerly visited those coasts with good advantage to themselves and honor to the Nation ; I shall endeavor to give a brief account of the Achievements of some of the principall of them, leaving the rest unto such particular occasions of remembring them, as will occurre in the discourse afterwards ; and begin first with him whose memorie is deservedly most famous and honored by all men, for his extraordinary abilities, experience, and happy conduct at Sea, viz. with *Sir Francis Drake*.

1. This brave Sea man, at the first beginnings of his actions, was Captain of the *Judith*, with *Sir John Hawkins*, in the voyage of *Guiny*, one thousand five hundred sixty seven, and received together with him some considerable damage and injuries from the Spaniard, in the Port of *Saint John D'Ullna* of the West-Indies

dies, contrary to promise and agreement with him, and therefore to repayre himselfe, having first beene assured by some Divines that his Cause and Designe was just, as Master *Camden* witnesseth of him; In the yeere one thousand five hundred seventy two, he set out for *America* with two ships and a pinnace, whereof that called the *Dragon* was commanded by himself, and at his first attempt surpriseth *Nombre de Dios*, at that time one of the richest Townes of *America*: But in the Action, happening to receive a wound in one of his feet, which disabled him very much, he was not able either to hold the place, or to gather that rich spoyle that lay even in sight before him. For his Company, a little too much discouraged with his disaster, carried him back to the Ships, almost whether he would or no, to the great joy and content of the Spaniards, leaving the town and an infinite mass of treasure behinde them untouch'd; a great part whereof they saw with their own eyes in the Governors house, namely huge bars of silver lying round about the Hall of his Palace, piled up a great height from the ground, ready to be laded and transported for *Spain*, as soon as the Ships came. But there wanted some resolution in his company, by whom, being over-

borne, he was forced to put to Sea much against his Will ; so that the success of his first enterprise served onely to whet his stomach and courage, to give them a second visit as soon as might be. Being somewhat recovered of his wound, he falls with his Ships into the Sound of *Darien*, where he lighted upon a certain People called *Symerons*, which are, for the most part *Negros*, and such as having been Slaves to the Spaniards, by reason of their cruelty and hard usage are run from them. they live in Woods and wild places of the Countrie, in great companies together, not much unlike to other Savages, hating the Spaniards deadly and doing them upon all occasions what mischief they can. By these he gets Intelligence, that a *Requa*, as they there call it, that is, a certain number of Mules (most commonly they are fourty or fiftie in a company) laden with Treasure and other things, was to pass within few daies from *Panama* in the South-Sea, to *Nambre de Dios*, to be Ship'd from thence for *Spain*; which he therefore resolved, if it were possible, to surprize. These *Requas* from *Panama* to *Ventacuz*, which is about six leagues distant, in the roade to *Nambre de Dios*, doe constantly travel in the night, by reason of the openness of the way

way and the excessive heats in the day time : neither had they as then any other guard but onely of those who drive them, and perhaps some Gentleman or Officer of the Kings to oversee the Treasure, by reason of their great security, and that they had liv'd til then without all fear or suspicion of an enemy upon that coast ; so that the enterprise seemed to them not to be any matter of great difficultie. Wherefore having gained a sufficient number of those *Symcons* to his party, which he might easily doe , with no more than eighteen stout and resolute men of his own, leaving the rest to guard and manage the Ships as occasion might be, they march by night over the Streight of *Darien*, as 'tis called, which is that *Isthmus*, or neck of Land that joyns the two parts of *America* together, viz. the Northern and the Southern part, and contains in that part of it where they were, not above eighteen or twenty miles over, from Sea to Sea, though in length it be many leagues. They were come down undiscovered within one league of *Panama*, and had lodged themselves in a Grove on each side of the road where the *Regua* or company of Mules was to passe : which according to their expectation also came, and, as the manner is, so tye'd one to another, that if you

stop one, you make them all stand. The *Regua*, which was now coming, belonged for the most part of it, to the Treasurer of *Lima*, who with his Daughter and Family, were going for *Spain* with eight Mules in the company laden with Gold, and one with Jewels : which without question had been all taken but for the indiscretion of one English-man, named *Robert Pike*; who having drank a little too much Strong-water in his march, was become pot-valiant with it, so as his companion could not keep him to his postures nor perswade him to lye close, as they were commanded to doe, till the watch-word should be given; but hearing the Mules come neer, out of a foolish bravery and ambition to be the first that should give onset in such an Action, stood up; and wearing his shirt uppermost, as they did all, the better to distinguish and know one another in the night, was instantly descryed by a Spanish Cavaleer that rode a little before the Mules; who, suspecting what it might be, presently turn'd his horse, and gave such speedy notice thereof, that the principall part of the Treasure which came behinde, together with the Treasurer himself, his Daughter, and other of his company, were saved by a timely retreat, and onely some few of the formost Mules ta-

ken :

men : which, as they had some Treasure, so the English, knowing how soon the Countrey would be alarm'd by reason of their discovery, durst scarce stay to ransack them, but taking a little of what came next to hand, resolutely made their way through *Venta cruz.* and so by woods and wild forests of the Countrey to the Ships, which expected them in the Sound ; yet having the good fortune by the way, about *Rio Francisco*, to meet a smaller *Requa* of Mules laden with silver and some gold, which having better leisure to examine, they took and carried as much of it as they could away with them to their Ships, burying the rest in the ground.

3. In the year 1577 was his voyage about the World, in which to his immortall Fame and Honour, he was the first Commander of note that encompassed this Earths Globe and returned safe home again. For though *Ferdinand Magellan* had discovered the Streits before him, and gone far, yet he lived not to return home, being slain at the *Molucca* Islands, while he was reducing them to the obedience of his new Master, the King of Spain. This voyage afforded Sir *Francis Drake* some better amends and satisfaction from the Spaniards, than the former had done ; though even

even that was not altogether without profit. For in this he not onely took and well rifled many Towns and places of the Spaniards, upon the coasts of *America* (which they that write the passages of the voyage report more at large;) but especially he met with divers rich prizes at Sea; as namely at *Valparaiso* in the South Sea, a ship laden with Wines and as much of the finest Gold of *Baldivia* (which is counted the best of all) as amounted to thirtie seven thousand Duckets of Spanish money, beside silver and other good Commodities. At *Torapaxa*, upon the same coast, he met with thirteen bars of pure silver, amounting to four thousand Duckets: And after that with eight hundred pound weight of silver, that was going for *Arica* to be shipped from thence to *Panama*, and so for *Spain*, laden upon *Pacors*, which are certain Sheep of *America* about the bigness of Asses, which they use as Beasts of Burthen, especially for the carriage of their Treasure by Land from place to place. At *Arica* they rifled certain Barks and other small Vessels which they found in the Port, and take out of them, beside other Merchandize, fiftie seven wedges of pure silver, every one of them of the weight of twenty pound apiece, and amounting in all to one thousand one hundred

fourty

fourty pound weight of silver. At *Lima* they enter the Haven, where they found about twelve sail of ships fast moored at Anchor, their sails taken off, and all the Mariners secure on shore; whereupon examining the ships, they finde in them, besides abundance of Silks, Linnen and other good Commodities which they took, one chest full of Ryalls of Plate, which they thought not good to leave behinde; and (which pleased them as much as all the rest) they got intelligence here of another great Spanish ship, called the *Caca-fuego*, which was at *Payta*, laden with nothing but Treasure. This ship had perceived them at Sea, and was making all the sail she could for *Panama*: But before she could recover the Port, they pursuing her very hard, about Cape *Francisco* they get sight of her, and after some short dispute board her and make her yeild. In this ship they found thirteen great Chests full of Ryalls of Plate, twenty six Tun of other silver, four-score pound weight of pure gold, besides abundance of Jewels, precious Stones, and other rich Merchandise: all which became prize; having also in their way while they were pursuing of her, met a single Bark laden outwardly with nothing but ropes and tackling for ships, but searching more within, they found

found no less than seventy eight pound weight of fine gold, beside many great and goodly Emeraulds, with other Jewels. They took all and setting their sail for *Guatulco*, otherwise called *Acapulco*, a noted and much frequented Port of these Seas, in their way they meet a ship from *China*, laden with Silks and *China* dishes, of which they take as much as they thought good, and after that rife the Town of *Guatulco* it self; where, beside some quantity of gold, jewels and other plate, they finde one pot of the bigness of an English bushel, full of Spanish Ryals; which having empried they departed without being farther troublesome: onely one *Thomas Moon* an English man borrowed a chain of gold, which he hapned to finde about a Spaniard, just as they were going out of Town. At this place, finding themselves reasonably well laden, and that their ships had endured the Sea a long time, they resolve to return for *England*; which after some time they likewise did, by the way of the *Molucca* and *Philippine* Islands, and on the third of *November* 1580, which was the third year of their voyage, they safely arrive at *Plimouth*.

4. In the year 1585, this noble and renowned Sea-man, having been first Knighted, and

and otherwise also much honoured by Queen Elizabeth, made another voyage to America with a greater number of Ships; in which voyage, beside other places of less note, he took and burnt a good part of the Town of St. Domingo, in the Island of Hispaniola, forcing the inhabitants to redeem the other part with a summe of twenty five thousand Duckets ready Money. He took also Caribagena, a Town upon the Continent, and in it Alonso Bravo the Governour, and after the burning of some houses had the summe of eleven thousand Duckets paid him by the Inhabitants to spare the rest. He took likewise the Towns of St. Anthony and St. Helena. But at last the English in the Ships falling sick of the Calenture, and many dying, he was forced to return for England with what he had already got; which upon value was found to amount unto threescore thousand pound sterling, of cleere prize, beside two hundred pieces of Brass Ordinance, and forty of Iron.

In the year 1595. was his last voyage, which proved not altogether so successfull to him as the former, by reason (as is supposed) of some misunderstanding betwixt him and Sir John Hawkins, who was the other General joyned in Commission with him for the expedition

expedition. They both ended their dayes in this voyage; and particularly Sir *John Hawkins* before *Port-rica*, as soon as ever the ship came in sight of the place. After which Sir *Francis Drake*, being now sole General, made an attempt upon it, *via* upon *Port-rica*, but could doe no more than fire some of the ships in the Haven, receiving also some loss himself. Nevertheless, after this hee took *Rio de la Hacha, Rancheria*, which at that time was a rich Town, through the Trade of Pearl-fishing; and last of all *Nombre de Dios*, but found nothing so much Treasure in it now, as he saw the first time: And from hence marching by Land towards *Panama*, he had hopes to have surpris'd that place: But Sir *Thomas Baskerville*, who commanded a Party of seven hundred and fiftie Souldiers upon that designe, found the passages over some mountains so difficult, by reason of their straitness, and the passes so well fortified and guarded, that he was forced to retreat, not without some loss of men, which the Spaniards knowing the Countrie better than they, and having the advantage of the Woods on both sides of the way as they marched, killed in their return. By reason whereof they were forced to put to Sea again; where, not long after, the General himself

himself fell sick, and partly of a Flux, and partly of griefe, as 'tis supposed, that things succeeded no better, having been hitherto in all his endeavors acquainted onely with success and victory, dyed within few daies, before the *Porto-bello*, and almost within sight of *Nova de Dios*; and the Fleet under the command of Sir *Thomas Baskerville*, returned for *England*.

Of Sir Thomas Cavendish his voyage.

6. The second in renown among Englishmen for the Adventures of *America*, and especially for a prosperous and compleat circumnavigation of the Ocean, was my honoured Countryman Sir *Thomas Cavendish* of *Trimley* in *Suffolk*; who in the year 1586. with three Ships and about one hundred and twenty men set out from *Plimouth* for the *West-Indies* upon Thursday the 21. of July, having in his company Captain *Francis Pretty* of *Eye*, Captain *Hovers*, Captain *Mellis*, and some other Gentlemen: and the 25. of August following fell with the point *Sierra Leona* on the coast of *Guinny*; and from thence by the 7. of September with the Island *Madrabamba*, which is one of those about *Cape verde*; a place

place very convenient for the taking in of fresh water and other necessities for men at Sea, but otherwise much subject to sudden claps of Thunder, Lightnings, and Storms, especially in Winter. Their designe was for the Streits and the South Sea; wherefore declining the Islands and the coast of *Terra firma*, as they call it, which is that part of the Continent of *America* which lyeth West and South-west of the Islands, they steer their course more directly South, and by the latter end of *October* they discover *Cape Frio* on the coast of *Brasil*, and put in with an harbour betwixt the Island of *St. Sebastian* and the Continent, where they stay some time, building a new Pinnace, and supplying their Ships with such other necessities as the Country afforded. After which they put to Sea again, directing their course immediatly for the Streits; to which place from the utmost coast of *Brasil* Southward it is reckoned commonly six hundred leagues. *December* the 18. they enter the harbor called *Port desire*, which is a very good Harbor, and hath a safe road for Shipping before it. From hence on the 6. of *January* they put in for the Streits mouth, and after a few daies come to Anchor, not farre from the place where the Spaniards had a designe to have built and fortified

fityed a Town for the command of the Streits,
 and the securing of the passage into the South
 Sea against all Nations but themselves. But,
 as it appeared, their project took no effect.
 For of four hundred men left there two or
 three years before, by *Don Pedro Sarmiento*,
 for that purpose by order of the King of Spain,
 there was scarce twenty remaining alive when
Mr Thomas Cavendish sailed that way; the rest
 were either starved for want of necessarie Pro-
 visions, or destroyed by the Natives. They had
 begun their Town, (which they named *St. Phi-*
lip) upon the narrowest passage of the Streits,
 about fourteen leagues within the mouth to
 the Southward, and not above half a mile
 broad, in a place very convenient for their
 purpose, and the Town it self well contrived,
 with four several Forts, and every Fort having
 some piece or pieces of Ordinance to defend it;
 which the Spaniards, when they saw them-
 selves left destitute, and not able to subsist any
 longer there, had buried in the ground; but
 the carriages of them standing open and in
 view, upon search the pieces themselves were
 soon found and taken by the English. Many
 of the Spaniards that had been left there, as
 above said, were found dead in their houses,
 and lying in their cloaths unburied. Those few

that were alive (which were onely twen-
 three in all, whereof two Women) althoug
 they were scarce able to goe or to help them-
 selves, yet were resolved, as they said, to tra-
 vel by land towards *Rio de la Plata*, which
 distant some hundred of leagues from the
 place where they were; which they had fre-
 leave to doe. The English thereupon made
 no long stay, but having named the place
 instead of *St. Philip, Port-jamin*, they departed
 holding their course still along the Streits,
 upon the 24. of *February* they entred the
 South Sea; having found the whole course
 the Streits to be about ninetic leagues
 length, and to lie in the same latitude (or
 least with very little difference) at both ends
viz. in fiftie degrees and two Terces, South-
 ward of the line, having good and convenient
 harbors on both sides, almost at every league
 end; but otherwise of a most difficult passage
 by reason of many windings and turnings
 the Sea, and of so many contrary windes, which
 from severall coasts the passage is almost
 continually infested, but especially in the de-
 of Winter; at which time by reason of the in-
 tollerable sharpness of the cold, frequent
 storms, & huge flights of Snow, there is neither
 sailing nor abiding upon those Seas: nor is

life or ease at any time to repass, viz. back again out of the South Sea into the Atlantick or Northern, as it is to enter by the North Sea.

7. Being got now into *Mare del Zur*, and, as it were, upon the back-side of *America*, they ply up and down those coasts, visiting, and not seldom pillaging the Towns, taking such ships as they meet withall, and steering their course now so far North-west, till at last, upon the 12th. of *June* 1587 they double or cross the Equinoctial line back again, sailing Northward of it, up towards *Panama* and the East of *New Spain*. But whether it were that intelligence had been given to those parts of their being upon the coasts, it was some time before they could see any ships stirring. The first was upon the 9. of *July*, when they took a new ship of one hundred twenty Tons, when coming from *Pana*, but newly lann- ed off the Stocks, laden chiefly with ropes and other tackling for ships, which they took; and in her one *Michael Sancerus* a Provençal, borne at *Marseills*, who, to doe the Spaniards pleasure, gave them information of a great ship called the *St. Anna*, which was expected from the *Philippine* Islands; and which upon this information they took within a few dayes

F 2

after

after, being the richest prize (one of them)
 that ever was taken and carried off those Seas
 by English-men. But first they sail to *Acapulco*
 or *Guatulco*, as some call it, and having
 fled the Town, in the Haven they take a Barke
 of fiftie Tuns burthen, laden with six hundred
 great bags of Anile, which is a rich sort of dye
 every bag being estimated at fourty Crowns
 and four hundred baggs of Cacao, which are
 kinde of Fruit of *America* of the bignesse
 Almonds, and so much esteemed there, that
 they pass both for meat and money; every one
 of which baggs being valued at ten Crowns
 the whole prize in the Barke, beside what they
 got in the Town, amounted to twenty eight
 thousand Crowns. From hence they set sail
 for the Bay of *St. Iago*, still Northward; and
 being come up as farr as the Tropique of *Cancer*
pricorne, they were in some distresse for fresh
 water, having none visibly neerer them than
 thirty or fourty leagues. But by the advice
 of the above said *Michael Sanciuz*, who was
 a man of long and great experience upon the
 Coasts, they digged some four or five fathoms
 deep in the ground, and found very good
 fresh water in a soyle outwardly dry and sandy
 die; which he also told them was an usual
 experiment in many other places, upon the
 Coast.

wafts. About the middle of *October* they
 sailed with the *Cape St. Lucar*, on the West-
 side of the point of *California*, and came to
 anchor in the Bay called *Aguada Segura*,
 where they resolved to stay a while, and wait
 for the coming of the *St. Anna* abovesaid;
 which about the fourth of *November* follow-
 ing appeared to their no little content. She
 was a ship of seven hundred Tuns burthen,
 and Admiral of those Seas; and therefore not
 only richly laden but well manned. By noon
 the English ships got up with her, and gave
 her a broad-side, which she answered: but
 she soon after put her self to a close fight, and ex-
 hibited boarding; which the English attempt-
 ing, were twice beaten off, and forced to be-
 lieve themselves again to their Ordinance, with
 which they so raked her from side to side, and
 did it so continually, that after a dispute of
 five or six hours she was made to yeeld,
 the Captain hanging out a flag of Truce, and
 begging mercy for their lives: which the Ge-
 neral readily granted, and thereupon com-
 manded him to strike sail and come on board;
 the Captain, Pilot, and some of the principall
 merchants did so. They were in all an hundred
 and ninety persons in the ship, men and wo-
 men, and professed that their lading was one
 hundred

twenty two thousand Pezos of fine Gold, besides Silver, abundance of Silks, Sattins, Damask, Musk, Conserve of Fruits, Druggs, and other of the richest Merchandise of *India*, which they could give no certain estimate. Now every Pezo we are to know, in silver, valued at eight shillings, or not much less (for I confess there is some difference in Authors about the estimate of it:) and consequently in gold (according to the common proportion betwixt gold and silver, used at the *Indies* which is twelve for one) a Pezo must be worth ninety six shillings, or 4 li. 16 s. so that the whole value of the prize could not be much less than a million of sterling money; enough to make them all Gentlemen that shared in it. The Spaniards and other people of the Ship according to their desire, were set on shore at the Port of *Aguada Segura*, with necessary provisions given them, both for their Subsistence and defence in their travell.

§. From hence the English set sail for the *Philippine Islands*, and in the space of four or five dayes sailing, they reach the Islands *Ladrones*, as they are called, which lie in the westward, about seventeen or eighteen hundred leagues from *California*, whence they came, and in twelve or thirteen degrees of North Latitude.

itude. They are a very convenient place
 for the taking in of fresh water, and for the
 supplying of ships at Sea, with many necessa-
 ries in so long a voyage, but the people wholly
 barbarous and savage, and so extremely given
 to pilfering and stealing, that from thence
Magellan gave them their name, viz. *La-
 drones*, or the Island of Thieves. From hence
 about the middle of *January* they arrive at
Manilla, the chief of the *Philippine* Islands,
 and about three hundred seventy leagues di-
 stant from *Ladrones*. This is counted to be
 the richest Countrey for gold in the World,
 but scarce of silver; so as the *Sanguelars*, as
 they call them, who are great and rich Mer-
 chants of the Countrey, doe continually trade
 with the Americans of *New-Spain* for their
 silver, giving weight for weight for it in pure
 gold. From hence, about the beginning of
March, they reach the Islands of *Java*, where,
 by way of barter with the Inhabitants, for such
 things as they had got upon the coasts of *Ame-
 rica*, they plentifully store their ships with
 all kinde of Flesh meats, Bowles and Fruits
 necessary for their subsistence homeward, re-
 ceiving at their going away a present of the
 same nature from the King of the Countrey,
 viz. two large fat Oxen alive, ten great and

fat Hoggs, abundance of Hens, Ducks, Geese, Eggs, a great quantity of Sugar Canes, Sugar in plate, Cocos, Plantans, sweet Oranges and sowre, Lymons, great store of good Wines, *Aqua vita*, Salt, with almost all manner of Victuals beside. And it was no more than they had need of in the place where they were. For putting again to Sea, and making for the *Cape de buona Speranza*, or of good hope which is the utmost point of *Africk* Southward, they sailed upon that vast Atlantic Ocean, before they could reach the Cape, little less than nine weeks, running a course of eighteen hundred and fiftie leagues at least by Sea, without touching land; some reckoning it to be full two thousand leagues, viz. from the Islands of *Java* to the Cape of good Hope. There lyeth about forty or fiftie leagues short of the Cape a certain Foreland called *Cabo falso*, because it is usually at its first discovery at Sea mistaken by Mariners for the true Cape. From hence by the eighteenth of *June* 1588. they fall in sight of the Island *St. Helena*, which lyeth in the main Ocean, and, as it were, in the middle way betwixt the Coast of *Africk* and *Brasil* in fifteen degrees and fourty eight minutes of Southern latitude, being distant from the Cape of good Hope
betwixt

Betwixt five and six hundred leagues. It is a
 pleasant Island, and especially well stored
 with Fruits, as namely Oranges, Lymons,
 Pomegranats, Pomecitrons, Dates, and so
 proper for Figgs, that the trees bear all the
 year long, and at any time of the year a man
 may gather both blossoms, green Figgs, and
 ripe. It affordeth likewise good store of wilde
 fowle, as Partridges, Pheasants, a kinde of
 Turkeys, of colour black and white, and as big
 as ours in *England*; great plentie of Goats,
 and such abundance of Swine fat and large,
 that they live wilde in Heards upon the moun-
 tains, and are not to be taken but by hunting,
 and with great pains and industrie. From
 hence by the twenty fourth of *August* they
 discover *Flores* and *Corvo*, two of the *Azores*
 or *Tercera* Islands; and upon the ninth of
 September following, having first suffered a
 terrible storm and tempest upon the English
 Coast, which carried away all their sails, and
 put them in great fear and danger of losing
 all they had got; yet at last by the mercy of
 God and favour of a good winde they arrived
 safely at *Plimouth*.

of
 of

Of the Earl of Cumberland's voyage.

I. The right honourable *George Lord Clifford* Earl of *Cumberland* had before this made several voyages and Adventures against the Spaniards in and towards the parts of *America*, viz. in the years 1586, 89, 92, 94, &c. with various success: But in the year 1597, he more publickly and avowedly in his own person undertook an Expedition with eighteen or twenty good ships, and about a thousand men, being himself Admirall and Commander in cheif. He set out from *Portsmouth* on the sixth of *March* 1597. with designe at first to attend the coming out of the Carracks, which goe yearly from *Spain* to the *West-Indies*: But being disappointed of them, through some intelligence that the Spaniards had gotten of his Lordships being at Sea, he sailed on for the coast of *America*, resolving by the way, with the consent of the principal Commanders with him, to make an attempt upon *St. John de Port-rico*, which is the principal Town and Port to an Island that bears the same name, viz. *Port-rico*, lying upon the Coast of *America* in eighteen or nineteen degrees of Northern latitude. It was a place, where

here a few years before, Sir *Francis Drake*
 had received some loss, and Sir *Nicholas Clif-*
ord, the Earls brother, been slain by a shot
 from one of the Platforms, as hee sat at supper
 with the General in the ship called the *Defiance*;
 the Town standeth in a little Peninsula by it self
 yet closely joyned to the main Island towards
 the North, being a place very well seated, and
 fortified with two strong Castles; the one of
 which is built chiefly for the defence of the
 Haven, the other of the Town. About three
 or four leagues distance before the Town lyeth
 a fair sandy Bay or Beach, which the Sea wash-
 eth on one side; over which the English at
 their first landing marched directly to the
 Town, through a thick woody Forest, and at
 the end of that upon a Cawsey of some two
 or three score in length, and of breadth
 onely to admit three persons to march a
 breast; at the end thereof they perceived a
 strong bridge of wood to be built, which rea-
 ched from one Island to the other, and joyned
 them both together, having also some Barica-
 does to defend it, and a Block house with
 Ordinance on the further side of the water.
 They were informed, that at a low water they
 might pass the bridge on either side of the
 Cawsey: whereupon waiting till two of the
 clock

clock the next morning, when the ebb would be, they attempt the passage; but could not gain it, by reason the Ordinance played so thick and directly against the Gawscey: so they retreat with the loss of about fiftie men in all, wounded and killed. Next day the Generall gave command that another Fort, standing upon the principall Island, should be attacked by Sea. The place was of dangerous access; yet by the help of some Musketeers that were gotten upon certain Rocks within the Island, so neer that they could play upon them in the Fort, within little more than an hours space, the Spaniards that kept it quitted the place, and they that attacked it by Sea, in boats entred; howbeit the ship that brought them neer it was her self cast away upon the Rocks at the ebbing of the water, as it was at first feared that she would be. The Spaniards that had quitted the Fort, together with the chief of the Town that were not already fled, retire and betake themselves to another Fort, called the Fort *Mora*, giving the English leave to enter the Town, & also to block up the Fort wherein they were: So that in few dayes they were content to render themselves upon such terms as the Admiral offered them, and the English became Masters of all. The Town and Forts
being

being thus taken, the Generals design was to
 have kept the place; which might easily
 enough have been done: But it was not long
 before the English, partly through some di-
 temperature of the aire, which in that place,
 being a flat and low Island, is not so pure
 and cleer as in the higher part of the Country,
 but chiefly through their own intemperance
 and irregular dyet and drinking, the place af-
 fording them plenty of all things, and espe-
 cially of many luscious and strange Fruits, sick-
 ned and dyed so fast of the Calenture, bloody-
 Flux, and other hot diseases, that after nine or
 ten weeks holding the place, and six hundred
 of his men dead, as abovesaid, his Lordship was
 forced to return for *England*, doing no fur-
 ther hurt to the Town, save onely the bringing
 away of four score pieces of Ordinance, the
 Bells of their Church, and some quantity of
 Sugar and Ginger: nor sustaining other loss
 himself in the whole voyage, than of three score
 men slain upon taking the Town, the six hun-
 dred dying of the Flux and other diseases, the
Pegasus wracked upon *Goodwin Sands*, the old
Frigot upon *Usbent* on the coast of *Normandy*
 with fourty men in them, and a Bark lost by
 tempest about the *Bermudas*. The Admiral
 at his returning, left Sir *John Barclay* behind
 him

him with some men and ships, to compound with the Spaniards for the Town : but the seeing the General himself was already gone and knowing the condition of the English to be such, by reason of the sicknesses amongst them, that it was not likely Sir John would stay long after him, made no great haste to compound, but found means to protract the business so long, that at last the English were forced to leave it to them, and that without burning or doing any other prejudice to it, according as the Admiral had given order before ; being a person of great honour, and one that sought honour more than spoyle, by the Expedition ; as the Spaniards well found.

Of Captain John Oxenham.

1. Hitherto we have spoken of such Adventurers, and voyages to the New World, as were either publicly or privately owned and avowed by the State ; here followeth one, who, as it seems, wanted that priviledge, going onely upon *jus Nature*, as he conceived, and to recover that by force, which he complained was by force taken from him, and having no other means left him whereby to obtain his right. This was Captain *John Oxenham*, a man who had

had formerly been Servant, Souldier, and Mariner with Sir *Francis Drake*, and together with him sustained some loss by the Spaniards at the Port of *St. John D'ullua*: And therefore, notwithstanding his proceedings may seem to want some formalities of Law to justify them, and that the Spaniards counted and sentenced him for a Pyrate, because he wanted Commission; yet seeing his Actions were not altogether groundless, and that his attempt was so memorably daring and hardy, and also so well and happily managed, so far as concerned himself, I shall not fear to add his name, and a brief report of his Action, to the rest of these worthies.

2. This man, as was said, had served Sir *Francis Drake* in his Voyages and Adventures at Sea a long time, and had thereby gained himself no small skill in Maritime affairs, and was particularly acquainted with the Coasts and Commodities of the *West-Indies*; so that by the year 1575. he was got to be Captain of a ship of a hundred & forty Tons burthen, carrying seventy men in her: with which in the year above-said he set sail for *America*, and arriveth at the Sound of *Darien*, at that very place, where a few years before, Sir *Francis Drake* had fallen acquainted with the Symeroons

meroons that put him upon the designe for *Panama* by Land, and of surprizing the Treasure Mules ; a Place and People which Captain *Oxenham* knew very well, and intended to make use of them now. Nor was it long before he lighted upon some of them stragling up and down in the wildes of the Country : but they tell him that the Mules travel not now, but with a strong guard of Souldiers ; which was somewhat contrary to his expectation, and alterd his designe quite : nevertheless, being resolved to Act something worthy of a man, before he returned, it served not so much to disanimate him, as to put him and his companions upon a more hopefull, yet withall a more hard attempt : which was, that seeing there was now but little hopes of doing themselves any good by land, as they hoped, nor by Sea on that side they were, they resolved to visit the other Coasts, and to trie their fortunes upon the South Sea. To this end the Captain brings his own ship on ground, and, as well as he could, covers her with boughs and such other rubbish as the place afforded ; and burying his Ordinance in the ground, he with his company and six Negros to conduct them, march by Land towards the Coast of *Panama* and *Peru*. Having gone a matter of twelve or
fourteen

fourteen leagues they come to a River, which, as the Symeroons told him, ran directly into the South Sea. Here they cut down wood, build themselves a Pinnace of about fourty five foot long by the keel, and in her they put to Sea, making towards the Island of Pearls, which lyeth about twenty five leagues distant from *Panama* toward the South, hoping it would not be long before some ships from *Pern* or other parts of the South, would be sailing that way for *Panama*. So that by the way, however Sir *Francis Drake* hath deservedly the honour of first discovering the South Sea to English-men, viz. by the onely open, and known way of the Streits; yet it must be acknowledged, that Captain *Oxenham* was the first Englishman that ever sailed upon it with command.

3. He had not waited long, but there comes a Bark from *Quito* (which is a Province of the Countrie of *Pern*), laden with Commodities, and having in her besides of fine gold sixtie thousand *Pezos*, which he took; and within six dayes after another from *Lima*, wherein he had no less than two hundred thousand *Pezos* of silver, in barrs. What a *Pezo* is, both in silver and gold hath been already said, in the relation of Sir *Thomas Cavendish* his voyage.

There are that render these *Pexas pounds of weight*, saying that he took two hundred thousand *pound weight* of silver, and sixtie thousand *pound weight* of gold, which perhaps is not so well done, and may make the summe to seem less credible : for as much as every *pound weight* of silver, after the ordinary rate of five shillings the ounce, is worth four pound of silver in Coyne; and likewise every *pound weight* of gold, according to the common proportion betwixt gold and silver, which at the Indies is twelve for one, is worth fourty eight pound in Coyn; and consequently the whole value of the prize would amount to above three millions in gold and silver together, *viz.* two millions, eight hundred, and fourscore thousand pound in gold, and eight hundred thousand pound in silver; which perhaps every body will not beleeye. I think it therefore better to express it by the usual term and value of a *Pezo* in Spanish, which is commonly said to be eight shillings of English money: and so the whole value of the prize taken amounted to nine hundred and sixtie thousand pound sterling in gold, and to fourscore thousand pound in silver: which being found a competent prize, and enough to satisfie reasonable men, they retire with their *Pinnace* up the

the River, intending to make what haste they could to their ship. But as it unhappily fell out, through the covetousness and dissention of some of his company, so much time was spent before they could agree about sharing of their bootie, and how to transport it to their ship, that the Spaniards at *Panama* had notice of them ; whereupon ships were presently sent out to pursue them at Sea, and likewise some souldiers to intercept their return by Land. The Captain himself, through the obstinacie and willfulness of some of his company, was forced to leave the Treasure with them, and to travel some leagues up into the Countie to finde Negroes that might help him to carry it, his own men refusing to doe it but at their own demands, and quarrelling with him for larger pay. In the mean time the Spanish ships that sought him at Sea come to the mouth of the River where they were gone up, and by the Feathers of certain Hennes, which the English had taken, and, as it seems, plucked there, guessed presently that they might be gone up the River ; and thereupon putting in after them, they soon took both them and their prize together. The Captain, as I said, was absent : but by reason that either the Negroes, or else some of the English themselves that

were taken, had discovered their ship in the Sownd, neither he nor any of the rest escaped, but were all, first or last, met with by the Spaniards; and having no Commission to shew for what they did, were executed every man of them, onely two boyes saved. Thus, ended the stout and resolute Captain *Oxenham*; the Justice of whose cause I will not undertake to dispute with his Adversaries. I could wish it had been as perfectly just in all respects, as it was gallant and bravely managed on the Captains part; insomuch that his very enemies, who made him dye for it, doe yet admire and extoll it: being spoyled onely through the passion, covetousness, and self-will of some of his company, whose lives paid for their follie,

CHAP.

CHAR. V.

Of the situation, and most probable extent of the New World, the Temperature and Disposition of the Aire there, the quality of the Soile, and Nature of its several Climates.

1. **T**He Spaniards and other Nations have not altogether the same sense concerning the situation or extent of the *West-Indies*: Commonly they are taken to signifie that part of the World lately discovered, which lyeth Westward of the Worlds general and fixed Meridian, which, according to the common opinion, runneth through the *Azores* or *Tercera* Islands, from one Pole to another, thereby dividing the Globe of the Earth into two equall parts, or Hemispheres. The Spaniards looking to the pretended Donation or Grant, made by Pope *Alexander* the sixth, to the Kings of *Castile* and *Leon*, of whatsoever Lands or Islands discovered, or that should be discovered by them sailing Westward of the *Azores*, whether upon the coast of *India* or elsewhere, doe not seldom comprehend under the notion of the *West Indies*, and the New

World, the *Molucca* and *Philippine* Islands with some other places in the Indian Sea though they lie cleerly in the Eastern Hemisphere : which, because it seems not so properly done, and doth otherwise beget obscurity in the Authors that treat of this subject, I thought it not amiss to give this *Item* of it here. According therefore to the most ordinary and general acception of the word, *America*, or the *West-Indies*, is that part of the World lately discovered, which lyeth Westward of the *Azores*, and the Worlds Meridian, and possesseth, either in Sea or Land, the greatest part of that Hemisphere, viz. the Western Hemisphere of the World ; the Land it self, viz. of *America*, being bounded Eastward and South-East with the Atlantick Ocean ; and Westward, and to the South-west with *Mare del Zur*, the Northern borders of it being not yet known. A Countrey of so vast an extent, that some have equalled it to all the other three parts of the World, *Europe*, *Asia*, and *Africa* together, to whom I can hardly assent ; yet doe readily acknowledge it to be much larger than any one, yea perhaps than any two of the other parts, could they be exactly compared. It lyeth for the most part North and South, not directly, but somewhat in-

lining, in the Southern part of it, Eastward, and in the Northern part Westward, being in length, as 'tis commonly supposed, from *Terra Magellanica* in the South, to *Estotiland* and the further parts of *Quivira* in the North, above a thousand nine hundred and seaventy seven Spanish leagues, which according to English or common measure, is more than six thousand miles; reaching from 60. degrees of Northern latitude (for so farr it hath been discovered already by Land) unto 53 degrees of Southern: The breadth of it, viz. from *St. Michael*, otherwise called *Piura*, in the Province of *Quito* upon the South Sea, to the Prefecture and Town of *Parayba* on the Coast of *Brasil*, where it is thought to be broadest, is reckoned to be 1300. leagues, and in the whole compass to contain little less than ten thousand leagues, or thirty thousand common English miles.

2. The whole Countrie lyeth in the form of two *Peninsula's*, or large demy-Islands, joyned together by an *Isthmus* or neck of Land called the Streith of *Darien*, of about an hundred miles in length, but in breadth, viz. from one Sea to another in many places, especially about *Panama* and *Nombre de Dios*, not above seventeen and eighteen miles over.

They that resemble the Country to the form of a *Pyramis* reversed, I suppose, would be understood onely of the Southern or *Peruvian* part, as 'tis called; neither is it so easie to conceive, where they lay the Basis of it: if from the Coast of *Peru* Westward, to the uttermost point of *Brazil* towards the East, as by the form of the Maps 'tis most probable they doe; the spire, or top, of their *Pyramis* will have somewhat an obtuse or blunt point; in as much as the Countrie of *Magellanica*, which lyeth upon the Streits and maketh the point of the *Pyramis*, is by confession some hundred of leagues over from East to West, or from the Atlantick to the South Sea, the Streits themselves running a course of one hundred and ninety leagues all along the Coast of it; and consequently must be of a far greater bredth than the Streight of *Darien*; where 'tis evident the Land of *America*, or rather of *Peru*, contracts it self into a much sharper point or *Pyramis*, viz. betwixt *Panama* and *Nombre de Dios*, as hath been said. To me (taking the whole Country, or both *Peninsulas* together) *America* seems rather to resemble some rich Usurers bagge, tyed fast in the mid'st; the one end whereof is rich and well stuff'd with Crowns, the other empty and loose; so seems

America:

America. The Southern part thereof containing the golden Countries of *Pern*, *New-Grada*, *Castella aurea*, *Chile*, and the rest, like the full bottome of the bagge, swells and spreads it self with a large circumference and border, both East and West: the Northern part, especially beyond *New Spain* and the streit of *Darien*, which is as it were, the hand upon the Purse, and that part, by which the Catholike King both holds and commands all the rest, as the Provinces thereof seem to lye more scattered one from another, and not so compacted together, as consisting much of Islands, and the Continent it self frequently divided with Bays and Inlets of the Sea, so in comparison of the Southern Provinces, it affords but little of those precious Commodities, for which *America's* acquaintance is so much desired by other Nations, and with equall care, policie, and good success hitherto, forbidden by the Spaniards.

3. It is a question among Cosmographers, too great for me to determine, whether *America* be really Continent or Island, that is, whether the Northern Borders of it be joyned to any part of *Asia*, or divided from it by some narrow Sea or Frith, as it is to the Southward from those, as yet undiscovered, Southern

thern Lands, which lie on the other side of *Magellan's* Streits? It seems to be the most common Opinion, at least amongst Englishmen, that it is an Island, though a huge one, wholly surrounded by the Sea, and divided from *Asia* by a certain Frith or narrow Sea, which they call the Streits of *Anian*, from a Province of the *Asiatique Tartarie* which beareth that name, and is supposed to border upon those Streits. Nor doe there want some presumptions of probability for it; as for example, a report of *Pliny*, out of *Cornelius Nepos*, an ancient and credible Author, of certain Indians that were driven by storm upon the Coasts of *Suevia*, or *Snaben*, in *Germany*, in their Canoa's or little Boats; in which it had been impossible, for them to have come thither by any other passage, than by the North parts of *America*: Impossible, I say, to have come any other way, and not to have touched first at some other Lands, or Islands by the way, viz. upon the Coasts of *Barbary*, *Spain*, *Portugall*, the *Azores*, or *Canarie* Islands; by reason that a ship, or any thing else, floating at Sea, when it is not hindred or diverted by storms, tide, or some other accidentall cause, naturally of it self, and by the proper course and conduct of the waters onely, beareth towards

wards Land : Beside that, it is not very probable, they could have subsisted alive, and not been starved in so long journey, as to have come by *Magellans* Streits, or the Atlantick Ocean. There be extant likewise some positive testimonies of certain persons, that say, they have really passed that way, as of one *Salvatierra* a Portuguese, and *F. Urdanetta* a Religious man, mentioned by Mr. *Carpenter* in his *Geographie* ; and of one *Juan de Fuca*, as he is called, an ancient Greek Pilot, mentioned by Mr. *Purchas*, in his third part of *Eng. Voyages*, pag. 849. 850. who is said to have lived forty years in *America*, and in his own person to have discovered the passage in the year 1592. at the command of the Vice-Roy of *Mexico*. But of what credit these testimonies shall be thought, for ought I know, the Reader must judge : I onely report them as I finde them. I could heartily wish, for the honor and great advantage which the Nation might reap by it, by having thereby a free passage into the South Sea, and consequently a much shorter cut to the other Indies ; that the passage were discovered, and the English well Masters of it, especially if it could be made so easily as the said Pilot *Juan de Fuca* pretendeth, and in so short a time as is the space of
 twenty

twenty daies ; or from the Coast and neer the latitude of *Virginia*, as some others have argued, and seem to hope that it may. But for my part (ingenuously to speak what I think) I fear the Proverb may somewhat prevail upon the English in this point, *Quod volumus facile credimus*, and that the desire we have to finde such an advantageous passage is not the least argument to make us think, *That it is to be found*. Not that I conclude there is none ; for that were to be too injurious against the positive depositions of those who are said to have made it, and which I my self cannot disprove by any evident reason : And the report of Sir *Thomas Button*, mentioned in the same *Mr. Purchas*, concerning a strong Tide coming from the West much about the same latitude, seems to add something to the probability of the passage : but that I think the discovery of it, especially from the Land on this side, or from any part of *Europe* immediatly, is a business of so great difficulty, that it is almost all one as if there were no passage. For how many of our own Nation, worthy men, and of great experience and skil at Sea, (not to speak of our Neighbours the Dutch, a People, no less industrious and skilfull) have with undaunted courage and resolution undertaken

at several times with great hazard of their
 lives and charge to the Adventurers, yet al-
 waies forced to return without effect? Those
 Northern Seas whither they sail Eastward or
 Westward, being so barred and block'd up,
 as it were, with huge and perpetual mountains
 of Ice, their nights so long, their day-time so
 dark, by reason of the continual foggs, mists,
 and flights of snow, which are ever and anon
 falling; and lastly the weather generally in
 those parts so extreamly cold and freezing,
 even in the midst of summer, that all things
 well considered, it may seem an attempt of
 small hope; and that Divine Providence by the
 order of Nature it self, or by the natural frame
 and constitution of this sublunarie and terre-
 strial World, hath set a *non plus ultra* to hu-
 mane indeavors that way. Nevertheless if the
 State think it expedient to make yet any fur-
 ther tryall in the business, and to command
 the prosecution of it, with more publique au-
 thority resolution and strength than as yet
 hath been used about it, as from so great wis-
 dome I cannot but expect much, so for the
 ends abovesaid, viz. the honour and advantage
 of the Nation, according to my dutie, I shall
 wish all happie success to it. But this perhaps
 will seem a digression; I shall therefore return.

4. The greatest part of *America* that is inhabited or commanded by the Spaniards (to speak in the language of Astronomic) lyeth between the Tropicks of *Cancer* and *Capricorn*, or within the 'Torrid Zone, as it is called, but to speak more intelligibly to the general capacity of Readers, it lyeth in the middle part of the World in respect of North and South, so as it receives the raies of the Sun almost perpendicularly, striking upon it all the year long, and consequently should be much subject to heats and droughts, as the Countries of *Æthiopia*, *Ægypt*, *Lybia*, and other parts of the World that lye in the same parallel, generally are. But with *America* it is not so : there is no Countrie in the World generally more temperate in respect of heat and cold, than the *West-Indies* be. The reason of the difference is partly the *Brisés*, as they call them, or the Levant windes, which perpetually blow upon it from the East on both sides of the *Æquator*, together with other windes from all coasts of the Sea, that doe much qualifie and abate the heats, which otherwise, 'tis probable, would be not a little troublesome, especially in the plain Countrie and maritime parts of it : and partly the very site and position of the Countrie it self, which more within Land is generally mountainous

mountainous and hilly : so that from whatsoever Coast or part of the World you enter the West-Indies, travelling forward, you still mount upward and ascend, as it were, in some parts, to a very great height ; which is true, not onely of the Continent or main-Land, but also of all or most of the Islands adjoyning : by reason whereof, not onely the Aire, for the most part, is found to be temperate, coole, and healthfull, but the valleys and lower grounds also very fertile and pleasant. Howbeit not in all parts of the Countrie alike, either for the one or the other, viz. either in respect of temperature of Aire, or fertility of Soyle. For we are to know, the Countrie of *America* consisteth generally of three several sorts of Land : The first whereof is flat, and, as it were, level ground, which lyeth for the most part upon the Sea Coasts, and takes up no small part of the Countrie, by reason that, as we have said, *America* is wholly, or at least for more than three parts of four surrounded and environed by Sea. The second is extream high Land, as consisting of the *Andes*, as they are called, which are a certain ridge or row of mountains, of such incredible altitude or height, that they are not thought to be paralleld in the world again. These run in a long and continued ridge

ridge through the whole Countrie of *Pern*, of the Southetn part of *America*, from the Province of *Popayan* almost up to *Magellan* streits, above a thousand leagues together; the tops of them being in most parts about twenty leagues over, and so perpetually covered with snow, that they are not much inhabited or known, save onely upon the borders, or lower skirts of them. The third is a mean Land betwixt both, consisting partly of mountains of lesser height, yet for the most part running parallel with the Andes through the whole Countrie of *Pern* Southward, and partly of vallies or low-land; both which together they call the *Sierra* or Hill-Countrie. And according to this diversity of site, or position in the severall parts or Provinces of *America* we are to expect a difference both in the temperature of the Aire, and in the qualitie of the Soyle. As for example, the Plains of *America* (for so they are commonly called) that is, the flat and lower parts of it, which lie upon the Sea Coasts, are generally hot and neither so much inhabited, nor counted so healthfull; yet neither are they scorched with any intolerable heats, by reason of the Brises, and those other frequent Sea gales, which, as we said, are continually blowing upon them, and as it were, cooling them

them from all parts : Nor yet are they parched
 with any immoderate droughts, although it
 never rains upon those parts of the Countrey,
 any time of the year : for instead thereof,
 there falls continually every morning a cer-
 tain dew, which after a time condensates, and
 turns into small pearly drops of water, which
 both not a little refresh the Countrey. Beside
 that, this part of *America*, being a flat and le-
 vel Countrey, it is so farr from being rendred
 incommodious for want of water, that in ma-
 ny places it may seem to partake somewhat
 too much of that Element ; as all along the
 Coast of *Brasil*, and also on the other side of
America Westward ; where the Countrey for
 great part of it is rendred uninhabitable, by
 reason of the great abundance of Waters,
 which falling with such huge Torrents, as they
 doe, from the mountains more within Land,
 and finding no convenient passage in those le-
 vel and flat Countreys, doe many times drown
 the Lands on each side of them for a great space
 together ; or at least render the Countrey less
 profitable and usefull, by opening so many
 great lakes, or standing waters, in all parts of
 the Countrey, and many of them of such vast
 extent, that they seem rather to be pettie Seas
 within Land ; and by turning so much of the

Land into marish or fenny ground, as upon the Coasts of *America* is every where to be seen.

5. Contrariwise upon the *Andes*, and in many parts of the Province of *Chile*, especially more towards the Streits, the Aire is extreme cold, and not well to be indured; and besides so strangely sharp and piercing of mens bodies that for strangers, and such whose bodies are not used to it, it is not a little dangerous to travell that way. They report, that in the midst of Land it makes men Sea-sick, and causeth the same alterations, vomitiings and other distemperatures of the stomach and body, but much more violent and extrem, which men commonly feel at their first going to Sea. This happens chiefly upon the mountains *Pariacaca*, *Lucana*, and *Sora*, which are part of the *Andes*. In other places, viz. about the *Puna*, which are another ridge of mountains, though lesler, running parallel with the *Andes* in the Province of *Chile*, the quality of the Aire is such, that it takes away a mans life suddenly, and before he feeleth any sensible alteration or griefe in himself, either from within or without. Men drop down dead as they travel in the way, without finding any pain or sickness in themselves: others lose their hands and feet

feet as they travel, or at least some of their fingers and toes, which fall and separate themselves from the other parts of the body, with no more sense or feeling, than when a rotten apple falls from the tree that bare it. And this, how fabulous soever it may seem, yet is it a certain truth. *Acosta*, and other Authors of approved credit, do avouch it from their own experience, viz. of what they had found and felt in themselves, and from what they had observed and seen with their eyes in others: and it seems confirmed by Mr. *Perrin* himself, who, in the relation of Sir *Thomas Cavendish* his second voyage to the Straits (which to his great misfortune happened to be in the deep of Winter, and when the weather there is most intolerably cold and freezing, as hath been formerly said) reports a like accident, namely of one *Harris* an English-man, who going to blow his nose, had the ill hap to pull it off and cast it into the fire, before he was aware: and of one *Anthony Knivett* of the same company, whose toes came off with his stockings in like manner, through the extremity of cold in those parts.

6. But the *Sierra* or mean Land, viz. betwixt the height of the *Andes* and the lowness of the *Plains*, as it takes up the far greater

part of the Countie, so is it generally more
 temperate, healthfull and agreeable to men
 bodie, both also abundantly well watered
 with faire and pleasant Rivers, such as for the
 multitude of them; and the largeness of their
 respective streams are not to be paralleld in
 any other part of the World: It enjoyeth con-
 stantly for proper seasons of rain and faire wea-
 ther, no less than Spain it self, and many other
 Countiees of Europe; by reason whereof the
 Soile is likewise rendered so exceedingly fe-
 rtil and happy, that it is to be admired what the
 report concerning the goodness and fertility
 doth. They have in many places two Harvests
 a year; (as in the Island of *Hispánida*) sowing
 in some bodie of *October* that which they sow in *April*
 or *May*; and in *July*, that which they sow in
October a year some say, there is no kinde of
 Grain sown at the *West-Indies*; but in some
 places it is sown with ripe and be fit to reap
 within four moneths. All kinde of beets,
 roots, or whatsoever fruits of the Garden, as
 Melons, Cucumbers, &c. in sixteene or twenty
 dayes at the best. In some places a bushel of
 Maize sown (which is their most ordinary
 bread-corn) yeeldeth two hundred bushels of
 increase; and a bushel of the best wheat, three
 score; and 'tis said to be an usual thing there

of an acre of ground well husbanded, shall reap
two hundred bushels, or twenty five quarters
of any Grain whatsoever. As for Fruits, I
mean such as are natural and of the proper
growth of the Countrey, there is doubtles
plenty and variety of several kinds, and those
incomparably fairer, larger, bigger, more lu-
cious and pleasing to the taste than are to be
found elsewhere in the World: And as for
such as have been transplanted thither out of
Europe, as most kinds of European fruits
have been; viz. Apples, Pears, Oranges, Cy-
mons, Quinces, Figs, &c. they doe not onely
thrive well, but in a short time are exceedingly
improved and bettered both in bigness, beauty,
and taste, onely through the richness and lu-
stiness of the Soile. It is said, that an eare of
wheat hath been seen there as big about as a
mans arme in the brawn, and of above a span
in length, and to have had growing in it above
a thousand grains: A Radish root hath been
likewise seen there of the same bigness and
length, viz. of a mans arme, very tender of sub-
stance, and of a pleasant taste. And tis com-
monly observ'd, that for Wheat and other
grain of *Europe*, they choole out a lofs lusty and
colder soile; because otherwise to sow it in the
fattest and richer ground, it would run all out

into stalk of a huge height indeed, but without earing or ever bearing of Corn. There be whole Woods and Forests, as it were, of Oranges, Lymons, Quinces, and other such fruit, both for bigness and beauty far exceeding the common ones of *Spain*, of the same kind. At the Cittie of *Cusco*, which is the Metropolis of *Peru*, they have ripe Grapes all the year long; and in diverse parts of the Countrey there be trees that bear fruit one half of the year on one side, and the other half year on the other, as *Acosta* reporteth of his own experience, of a Fig-tree in *Malla*, nigh the Cittie of *Kings*: and others speak as much of other fruits in other parts of the Countrey. And so it is likewise for Cattel, I mean such as have been brought thither out of *Europe*, whether great or smal Cattel, as Kine, Sheep, Hogs, Goats, &c. the increase that hath been of them would seem to be beyond beliefe, but that all Authors affirm it. In the Island of *Hispagola* (and 'tis likewise the same in many parts of the Continent, and other Islands beside) there are many thousands of Cattel, that live wilde in Heards upon the mountains having no certain owner; so as it is free for any man to kill them that will: and thousands of them are every yeer killed onely for their Hides and
the

the Tallow. And yet 'tis strange to consider what great multitudes of them are in private mens possession. The Bishop of *Venezuela* only is said to have had at one time 16000. head of great Cattel feeding upon his own pastures: Another to have had of one Cow which he kept twenty six years for breed, to have had an increase of eight hundred head of Cattel; and 'tis not counted any unusual thing for the Farmours of *America*, especially such as are professed Grasiers, and doe undertake (as it is the custom there) to serve such a Town, Citie, or Place with flesh meat at a certain rate, by the year, to have the like numbers, viz. ten or twenty thousand head of Cattel of their own and feeding onely upon their own grounds; being also men of great estates, and reckoned commonly at one hundred, two hundred, and three hundred thousand Duckets a man, and upwards; living splendidly in their *Estancias*, as they call them, or Farme-houses in the Countrie, and maintaining a Table both for dyet and ornament, not inferiour to most Knights, or the best Gentlemen in *Europe*: which doubtless is an evidence beyond all dispute, of the goodness and fertility of the soile where they live, that such men as these can both

live so gallantly and thrive so well.

CHAP. VI.

Of the principal Commodities of America, both Naturall and Mercantile; and first of Maize, of Cassavi, Jucca, and other roots there, of which they make bread.

1. **B**UT to give some further assurance of the general richness and fertility of the Countrey at the *West-Indies*, it is requisite that we speak something more in particular, of the severall Commodities and Fruits which *America* yeeldeth. These I distinguish into two sorts, viz. Commodities Natural and Mercantile. I call those commodities Natural which are so proper to the Place and Countrey of *America*, that as they grow there, so are they, at least for the most part, there likewise consumed and spent, as not being so fit or not so much used to be transported thence into any other parts by way of Merchandise; of which kinde, I suppose the most part of their Grain, Fruit, and Cattle may be reckoned to be. I call those Commodities Mercantile, which are generally brought from thence, and

in

so great abundance, by the Merchants that
trade in those parts; of which sort are chiefly
the Metals of *America*, viz. Gold and Silver;
to which must be added the great quantity of
Pearle, precious Stones and Jewels, yearly
brought from thence, their Sugars, diverse
sorts of Spicery and Druggs, abundance of
Cotton wooll and Cloath, Hides, many kinds
of wood, as well Medicinal as other: of all
which my purpose is to speak something, be-
fore I come to the particular description of the
several Provinces in which they are found;
but yet briefly, according as I am obliged, and
referring the Reader for more full satisfaction
upon this subject, in case he desire it, to *Acosta*
his Historie of the *Indies*, and to *Ovando* his ge-
neral Historie, whom I chiefly follow, and
who treat of these things more at large. And
first I shall begin with those Commodities
which I call Naturall; and amongst them with
such as are of most general necessity and use
for the sustentance of mans life, viz. with that
famous plant called *Maize*, and some other
plants and roots, of which at the *West-Indies*
they commonly make their bread, as we in
Europe doe of Wheat and other grain.

2. *Maize*, the common bread corn of *Ame-
rica*, is a Plant, which groweth plentifully at
the

the *West-Indies* in most parts of the Continent upon a moist and hot ground, as that generally is. It groweth upon a certain cane or reed of good bigness and about two cubits high from the ground: it groweth grape-wise, that is, the grain or fruit thereof, not covered nor inclosed in any husk or eod, as other grains of corn most commonly are, but open and in clusters, onely fenced on each side with a large and broad leafe, growing upwards by it to the full height of the *Maiz*. The cluster, or bunch of grains, is commonly a span and half long, sometimes more, rending sharp upwards the top in the fashion of a Sugar-loaf, and of the bigness ordinarily of a mans arme; having upon the top of the cluster a certain tuft or bunch of long hairy fillets, which, as the grain comes to maturity, doe likewise grow long, and bend downwards on one side of the bunch, not much unlike to the fore-top of Time and Opportunitie, as they commonly picture it. The grains of this *Maiz* are round, like unto pease, but bigger: yet commonly six or seven hundred of them are contained in one cluster, and for the most part two or three clusters upon every cane or reed. They are white till they come to be ripe, and then they turn outwardly black, but the flower of them,

substance within, is still as white as snow :
 and maketh a kinde of bread, for strength or
 nourishment nothing inferiour to wheat. It
 naturally ingendreth much blood ; so that
 rangers not used to it, if they eate overmuch
 at first, are subject to swell upon it, to be-
 come scabbie, and obnoxious to such other
 diseases, as proceed of too much abundance
 and heat of blood : but to such as are used to
 and eate it moderately, they say, it is a most
 agreeable kinde of food, easie of concoction,
 not at all obstructive, as bread with us, whe-
 ther of wheat or other grain, is generally held
 to be more or less, but rather in some degree
 purgative of noxious humors, and helpfull a-
 gainst the stone, and other oppilations of the
 body ; with which infirmities the Indians, that
 continually feed upon this *Maiz*, both in
 bread and many other waies dressed, are ob-
 served seldom or never be troubled. The buds
 of it while they are green and tender, are of
 such a fat and delicious substance, that they use
 them commonly instead of oyle and butter,
 being no less pleasant and agreeable to the taste.
 They make Wine of it also, or a drink not less
 strong than Wine, and which, being freely ta-
 ken, as quickly overcomes a man : which they
 make by steeping the graine of *Maiz* in wa-
 ter

ter till it breaks; and afterwards boyling it, much after the manner as we make ordinarily our beer of Mault. There are diverse sorts of this *Maiz*, but that which is most commonly used for bread, is this already described. Their way of eating it, especially with the common sort of People, is most commonly boyled in the grain hot, which they doe much after the manner that the People of *China* and *Japan* use in the boyling of their Rice; They have an earthen or some other sort of Vessel full of little holes at the bottom and round about the sides below, into which having put so much of the grains of *Maiz* as they think fit, and stopp'd it up; they set it into another vessel which they have full of water and already boyling on the fire; so as the water enters by little and little into the vessel where the *Maiz* is, through the little holes: with which the *Maiz* presently beginneth to swel, and after a little boyling so stops the holes of the vessel, that no more water can enter; and so boyling it on still, it comes at last from a pulp or soft moisty substance, to be more firm and hard, and such as they use for bread. And when they eat it single or alone as bread, they count this the best way of eating it, viz. in the grain hot: but otherwise dressing it, as they oftentimes doe,

with

with oyle, butter, sugar, and diuerſe ſorts of Spice; they make many other pleaſant and delicious meats of it. This, as I ſaid, is the more common way of uſing it by the ordinary ſort of people; but the rich and better ſort grinde the *Maire*, as we doe our wheat, and bake it, for the moſt part, into little cakes; which confectioned with ſugar and ſpices, as they uſe, doe make a very delicious and dainty kinde of meat.

This is their *Maire*, or the Indian wheat, as they call it. They haue another kinde of bread at the *Maſſe Indier* called *Caffari*, made of a certain root which they call *Jucca*: ſigir root of a huge ſize and ſomewhat of a moiſt ſubſtance; the iuyce whereof is held to be a kinde of poiſon, eſpecially to ſome perſons; for of others I ſhould, that they haue eaten of the root green and full of iuyce, though not without danger, not perhaps without coſting ſome of them their liues, as namely the Engliſh at *Puerto Rico* under the Earle of Cumberland: but the root of it, when it is well dreyed, eſpecially if they uſe ſo much art with it, as to grinde it and worke it into paſte, is made into a very good ſort of bread, yet more nourishing than ſoothſome. For the chief art which they uſe about it, is rather in the planting of the root

ſeede

than

than otherwise, of which the manner is thus. They raise a bed of earth in some lusty and good soile of about nine or ten foot square every way, in which, at an equall distance, they set ten or twelve slips, as I may call them, or little branches, which grow naturally out of the same root, each of them about a foot long, on every side of the bed commonly three, and laid so aslope within the ground, that the ends of them all doe almost meet together in the middle of the bed: Out of these after a certain time there springs a set of new roots, which grow commonly to the bigness and length of a mans arme, and sometimes as big as a mans thigh; but this is onely when they let them lye a long time in the ground, viz. a year, or year and half: but then likewise they are said to be best, and to make the most pleasant and agreeable bread. By that time they are come to maturitie, the whole bed or plat of earth, on which they were planted, seems to be all turned into roots. Then they take them out of the ground, and having scaped them a little on the outside, they slice or cut them into small pieces; which done, in a press made for that purpose, they strain and force out all the joyce they can, just in the same manner as some Countie folk strain crabs, and press their
cheese

cheese when they make it : and having by that means brought their *Yucca* into the fashion of a broad cake, but somewhat thin, they lay it up for some time, till it be more thoroughly dried, and then use it for bread without more trouble. 'Tis said to have little or no taste at all in the eating (and that's probable enough, by the ordering of it) but as for virtue and nourishment, wondrous good and wholesome ; yet I remember *Acosta*, who had tasted of it, sayes plainly, he had rather eat a piece of the courtest and blackest bread he ever saw in his life. Neither doe they eat it, but first moistned and steeped in some water or warm broth : the reason whereof is the excessive dryness of the bread, which is such that neither Wine, nor Milk, nor their *Molasso*, as they call it, which is the honey or sweet juyce of the sugar canes will pierce it ; and therefore it keeps long, and they carrie it commonly to Sea instead of Bisket. By Land it is chiefly used in the *Barlovento* Islands, which are *Hispaniola*, *Cuba*, *Jamaica*, &c. where there is not such plenty either of Wheat or *Maiz* ; not through any defect or barrenness of the soile, but as it is rather thought, from some indisposition of the Aire and Climate ; which is such, that the very meal which they bring thither sometimes
from

(112)
from *New Spain* and from the *Canaries*, contracts presently such a moistness, that they can hardly make any good bread of it; and that which they doe make will not keep, but in a few daies become moist and fluid again, and by consequence apt to corrupt; which is generally attributed to the over-much humidity and heat of the Countie.

4. There is yet a third sort of bread made at the *Iudies*, which they call *Cbugno*, and is made likewise of a certain small root called *Papa*. This bread is used chiefly upon the *Andes*, and some parts of the *Sierra* or Hill-Countie, and generally in all the colder parts and Provinces of *America*, where the root groweth plentifully, and where, by reason of the cold, there is not so great plenty of Wheat or *Maiz*, nor yet perhaps of *Cassavi* or *Jucca*; which, how dry soever it be, when they have reduc'd it to bread, yet naturally is of a gross and juycie substance, luscious, or at least, not unpleasing to the taste, and requireth a warm and lusty soyle. These *Papas* are a kinde of smaller root, not unlike to the *Bulbocastanum*, or ground-Chesnut, with many leaves growing out upon them: which they onely dry well in the Sun, and then grinde them, making a kinde of bread of them, which will keep long, and is probably
of

of a good and strong nourishment ; for it is much used at the Mines of *Potosi*, where the labour is hard. They eat these roots also dressed otherwise, both boyled and baked, and account them a very good meat.

CHAP. VII.

Of some choise and excellent Fruits, and Fruit-bearing Trees at the West-Indies.

1. **T**hey have likewise plenty of Rice and Millet growing in *America* ; but because they use them not so generally for bread, and that they are not proper to the Countrey, but found as plentifully elsewhere, I shall pass them over, and come to speak of such Fruits, Fruit-bearing trees, and others, as are peculiar to the *New-world*, and either not at all, or not so plentifully, or at least not of such perfection and excellency found any where else.

2. Amongst the Fruits, and trees that bear Fruit, at the *New World*, the *Platano*, or Plane tree, I suppose, for many respects may deserve the first place; not that it is the same tree which *Pliny* and the Ancients call the Plane, being

I neither

neither so big (in any proportion) nor affording such a shade as the Roman Plane is said to doe; but onely for some resemblance which it beareth towards it, and especially in the largeness of its leaves, wherein the Plane at the Indies doth much exceed even that of the Ancients. It groweth commonly two stades, or twice the height of a Man, from the ground, in a moist and wet soile, which it necessarily requireth, by reason that it makes a great stock, as they say, in the ground, that is, it casteth a very large root every way round about its bulk or body: which it self is not much above the bigness of a mans: out of which root, on all sides their spring diverse *Siens* or young *Planes*, round about the principal tree, every one apart by himself, and bearing fruit. The leaves of it are of a wonderfull bigness, of an ell broad, as some say, and above an ell and half long, hanging down to the ground, and sufficient to cover an ordinary man of stature from head to foot. The Fruit is for the most part a span long, and of the thickness of a Mans wrist, somewhat bending in the middle, and groweth in clusters commonly upon one bough, but that one so well laden, that it is said to be no unusual thing to gather two or three hundred Apples off that one bough. The

Apple

Apple or Fruit of the *Plane* is at first green : but as it comes to ripeness, it turns yellow both within and without, and becomes a most pleasant Fruit both for sight and taste; though many times they gather it green, and let it ripen in vessels made for that purpose; but it is best and sweetest, when it ripens upon the tree : The meat or substance of the Fruit within, when the rinde is taken off, is tender, very delicious and well nourishing, inclining nevertheless rather to cold than heat. The tree beareth fruit all the year long (as they say, 'tis usuall at the *West-Indies* for many or most Fruit-bearing trees to doe) and yet the same bough or stalk on which the fruit hangs, never beareth twice; but being cut away, another presently sprouteth in its room : so that there is a continuall succession, as it were, of new sprigs, young boughs, green fruit and ripe, ever following one another upon the principal stock. They are said to have whole groves of this kinde of tree in many parts of *America*, the fruit whereof yeelds no little profit and revenue to the owners; it being a fruit wherein the Indians doe generally much delight, eating it commonly not onely raw, but likewise roasted, boyled in pottage, baked, conserv'd, confectioned, and a hundred

dred other wayes, in all which it serveth very well.

3. The *Coco* is another excellent Fruit at the Indies. The tree which beareth it, is reckoned a kinde of Palme tree, not properly, but by reason of some resemblance it hath in growth to the ordinary Palme. It grows much upon the Sea coast, upon a dry and sandy ground, yet alwaies hot: and 'tis said then best of all to flourish, when 'tis planted neer to a Village, or some houses, or by the way side, seeming, as it were to be delighted, and to thrive the better for the dust and dirt, which in such places it is beaten withall. The body of the tree is smooth and slender, being in no part bigger about than a mans middle, and growing still more and more slender towards the top: nor doth it ever shoot forth a bough, sprig, or leafe, but at the very top, which is usually of the height of thirty or forty foot at least; But there it brancheth out into many small boughs, in fashion not unlike to an Ostridges feather, thick set and not growing upward, but running out and spreading broad, as they grow, on all sides of the tree or stock. Underneath, and, as it were, in the shade and coverture of which boughs, the *Cocos*, or *Coker-nuts*, as they call them (which are the fruit

of

of the tree) doe grow in little clusters, sometimes three or four of them together, immediately out of the stem or stock of the tree, reaching according to the number and quantity of them that grow, about a yard or more downward from the boughs. Every *Coco* or Nut is commonly as big as a mans head, of the fashion of the lesser sort of Mellons, and of so hard a shel, that if one of them should happen to light upon a mans head, falling from the tree (as commonly they doe fall when they are ripe) considering the height of the tree, he would have no great need of a Surgeon. Nevertheless the Fruit it self is admirable and rare in many respects, and serves the Indians for a hundred uses both of necessity and delight. Outwardly it is fenced with a green rinde or covering of a fibrous substance, full of many small strings or sinews, like threds; which therefore, when it is dry, they card out into a kinde of hards or course Tow, and make cordage of it, ropes for their Canoa's and ships, Match; but most commonly they use it for the stopping up of the ribs of ships, and in leakes; to which purpose it serveth excellently well, by reason that if it be never so little moistened, it presently swells, and by that means keeps out water better than any other stuff

they can use. Next to this rinde or outmost covering, which is commonly two fingers thick, there is a hard shell which contains in it a certain liquid substance, very delicious and pleasant, which while the fruit is green, is thin and cleer like water, but as white as milk, which they therefore drink both for the daintiness of the taste, and to cool them in the heat; but when the fruit comes to be ripe, it grows more jelly and thick, and likewise more pleasant. The quantity of it is commonly a pint and half, or a quart, more or less according to the bigness of the *Coco*. Of this liquor, beside that they drink it immediatly out of the fruit, as I have said, according to several waies which they use it, they make both Oyle, Wine, Vinegar, and also milk of it; and serves reasonably well in all. The liquor it self drunk raw out of the fruit, is thought to be somewhat flatulent, and to breed crudities and other gross humours in the body, if it should be drunk over-much: nevertheless it procures urine abundantly, and they say the Indians, who continually drink of it, are so little troubled with the stone or any other infirmities of the Reins, that they know not what they mean: and it yeeldeth such plenty of this liquor, that one tree of these *Cocos*, if it thrives well, is
 thought:

thought sufficient to supply a whole Family of no great number of persons, with Wine, Oyle, and Milk of it self alone. For every moneth it shoots forth new boughs and new *Cocos*, and 'tis not counted a good tree that beareth not fourty or fiftie *Cocos*, at least, every moneth. In the midst of this liquor lyeth the kernel of the Nut, or the principal meat of the *Coco*. This is a white and tender substance, in taste much like unto Almonds, taking up all the rest of the room in the *Coco*-shel, and containing likewise in it another sweet and delicate liquor, which is held to be both comfortable and cordial. They have likewise another way to extract Wine out of the *Coco*; which is to cut the rinde and bark off the tree, but most especially off the boughs and fruit, while it is green, from which presently there issueth and drops a certain liquor no less pleasant than Wine, which they receive into vessels prepared for that purpose; which liquor they commonly also boyle, and make of it a kinde of Honey or Sugar, more esteemed than that which is common.

4. There is another kinde of this *Coco*, which groweth most upon the *Andes*, in bigness not much less than the other; but instead of the fat oylie substance in the middle of those of the

first sort, these are filled with an huge number of small kernels or nuts, like to Almonds, or the graines of a Pomegranate admirably compacted and laid together. These kernels differ not much from Almonds in taste, and are a meat reasonably pleasant, so as the Confectioners use them commonly for Marchpains and other banquetting Stuff, instead of Almonds; although of that kinde of fruit, *viz.* Almonds, they want not most excellent ones at the *West-Indies*, especially those of the Province of *Cbacapoyas* in the Kingdome of *Peru*, which are said to be the most pleasing, delicate, and wholesome fruit in the World, of a more fat tender and delicious substance by far, than those of *Castile*, and for the most part much bigger.

5. Besides these, there is at the *New World* another tree called *Coca*, which though it beareth not any fruit that is much spoken of, yet by reason it hath some affinitie of name with the *Coco*, and is likewise a tree not a little esteemed there, it requireth that we speak something of it. It is a tree that grows well onely upon hot and moist grounds, and not much above a fathom high from the ground; yet requiring good care and skil to husband it. It is in estimation onely for its broad leafe, which

which it casteth forth every fourth moneth new, to which lease the Indians attribute I know not how many strange vertues and operations. This is certain and confirmed by daily experience, that it helpeth much against weariness of the bodie in any kinde of labour or travell, that it reviveth and exhilarates a mans spirits, seeming to infuse new courage and strength into him; insomuch that the Indians will oftentimes goe three or four daies together about business with no other meat or victuals but a few leaves of this *Coca* champed in their monthes. For which reason 'tis counted one of the chiefeft Commodities at *Potozi*, not onely amongst the Miners themselves, but generally with all other People; and they travel far to get it, viz. as far as the *Andes*, on the skirts whereof it chiefly groweth. They gather it with a great deale of care; and the lease being very broad, they have great Baskets or Hampers made on purpose, into which they put it, and so lade their Mules or *Pacos* with it, and away for *Potozi*, where it is present Merchandise. They sell it for the most part at three or four *pezas* a Basket, and vend commonly one year with another four-score or a hundred thousand Basket there.

6. Another

6. Another admirable tree there is at the Indies, called the *Magney* or *Mete-tree*; of which they report wonders, as namely that it yeeldeth them both Water, Wine, Oyle, Vinegar, Thred, Needles, and I know not how many other necessary things beside; not altogether untruly. The tree, according to the description which *Acosta* gives of it, is of a big body, and groweth commonly in the open fields, being of a moist and tender substance, hollow in the midst: which therefore, when it is green, they use to cut; and at the places where they make incision, there issueth a certain liquor fresh and sweet, which they commonly drink raw, as it issueth from the tree, gathering it in vessels of gourds, *Coco-shells*, and others which they set there on purpose to receive it. This liquor, according as they seeth or boyle it more or less, becomes a Wine of a pleasant good taste, or Honey, or Sirup, or Vinegar, every one in their kinde good and wholesome. It beareth a large broad leafe, or rather, as some say, diverse kindes of leaves; of which, while they are tender, they make rare and curious conserves; but when they are grown out to their full bigness, being of a gross fibrous substance, they draw out of it a kinde of thred like unto Hemp or Flax, which they

they afterwards spin and work into Mantles, Matts, Shoes, Girdles and many other necessary things, and of the rest make a sort of course Paper : and of the point of the leafe, which is both hard and also very sharp, they make Needles, that is, such instruments to sew withall as they had and used before the Spaniards came among them. The bark of the tree is both fat and very unctious ; so that, being roasted they make a salve of it, as 'tis said, very good for hurts, bruises and old sores; and from the boughs they gather a certain gum, which they likewise report to be a sovereign Antidote against poysons. The trees grow generally in all parts of the *West-Indies*, but chiefly in the Countrie of *Mexico* and *New Spain*; wher there is scarce an Indian to be found worth the house that he dwels in, but will be carefull to have some of these trees planted and growing about it, for the many necessarie supplies which it affordeth towards the maintenance of a house and family.

7. And in the Countrie of *New Spain* there likewise groweth another famous tree, called the *Tuna* or *Tunall* tree. It is originally from the root, nothing but a heap, as it were, of great broad leaves growing one out of another, as well from the ground as upwards; the

the leaves long and large, not sharp or pointed, but round at the ends, and of the thickness of a mans thumb or finger : in which manner growing, it possesseth in time a good large space of ground, and likewise grows upward into the fashion and height of some ordinary tree. Its manner of growing is onely by new leaves sprouting out at the ends of the old, and the old ones still waxing bigger and bigger; so that at last it seemeth to have got a body and boughs, which is yet nothing else but the roots of the biggest and eldest leaves, now at length come to be hardened into a stock or trunk; the leaves themselves being commonly thick set with certain long and sharp prickles, of a whitish colour. There are two sorts of them, the wilde, and the garden or planted *Tunall*; both of which beare a fruit, but very different one from the other, both for taste and use. The garden or planted *Tunall*, beares a fruit well esteemed with the Indians for meat, being somewhat bigger than ordinary plums, and having many little grains lying in the pulp or substance of it, like figgs, of a white colour, good taste, and no less pleasant than figgs; and beside that, of a delicate sent or smell. The fruit of the wilde *Tunall* is green, growing (as also the other doth) out of the very top of
the

the leafe, in the fafhion of a fig, narrow below or towards the leafe, but upwards growing broad and round, and on the top invironed with a fet of thick leaves in fafhion of a Crown or Coronet. The pulp of it, or fubftance within, is juycie and red, but neither pleafing, nor any way commended for the tafte, as I obferve : it ftains the hands of any that touch it with a deep red or fanguine colour, like Mulberries ; and which is more than that, the urine of thofe that eate of it, will feem as if it were all turned into blood ; infomuch that fome have been much frightened at their firft eating thereof, and taken themfelves for dead men, finding their urine to be fo ftangely changed, and not knowing the qualitie of the fruit. Within the Coronet, or circle of leaves, which grow upon the top of the fruit, there are many little grains contained, which are the feed of the *Tunall*, and out of which, if they fet them, there fprings forth a Plant of the fame kinde, round-bodied and not unlike to the trunk of other trees, when they firft fpring out of the ground, which prefently fpreads it felf into leaves growing one out of another fucceffively, as the firft did. This kinde of *Tunall*, as we faid, is not fo much regarded for its fruit, but for another commoditie which comes of it,
of

of far greater profit and advantage than the fruit could be, were it much better than it is; viz. for the grain, called *Cochinele*, so famous and so much used by the Dyers for the dying of perfect Scarlets, or colours in grain, which is made of this tree in manner as followeth. Upon the leaves of the wilde *Tunall* there groweth usually out certain tuberous or fungous excrescencies, which, in time, turn into a kinde of Insect, or Worme, and multiplyeth so much, that at last all the leaves of the tree, which, as it was said, are very large, and as thick ordinarily as the thumb or finger of a mans hand, seem to be turned into a web of Worms, hanging and interwoven together by the *fibra*, or little sinews of the leaves. These webs or verminated folio's of the *Tunall*, the Indians husband with a great deal of care and industrie, both while they are a breeding and afterwards, till they be well dried; at which time making them up into boxes or little casks, they send them into *Spain*, and other parts of the World, as a great and rich Merchandise; which doubtless they are. For 'tis said, they send commonly, one year with another, betwixt five and six thousand *Arrobes* of *Cochinele* onely into *Spain* (every *Arrobe* containing five and twenty pound weight at least)

which,

which, according to the usual rate they are sold at, amounts to two hundred eighty three thousand, seven hundred and fiftie *Pizas* by account.

8. Nor may I quite forget the *Flovo*, or *Hobi*, as some call it; for though it be not a tree that beareth any excellent fruit (for the fruit it beareth is onely a small yellow Plum, of the bigness of a Damosin, and of little substance or meat, by reason of the greatness of the stone) yet because it gives such a propitious and healthy shade, as they say it doth, so as both Indians and Spaniards seek it out on purpose to rest and sleep under it, it deserves, at least, that I should say what manner of tree it and where it grows. It is of bulk a fair and big tree, the boughs growing chiefly towards the top, thick and spreading; by reason whereof, as I said, it yeelds as cool a shade as most trees at the *West-Indies* doe; the bark or rinde whereof, being of a more tender and oylie substance, they boyl, and make a lavatory or bath of it, exceeding good and wholesome, especially for the leggs, in case of any extraordinary weakness or weariness, from what cause soever proceeding. It groweth chiefly upon the Streight of *Darien*, but generally in all parts of *Castella del oro*, and not much elsewhere,
and,

and, as they say, hath alwaies a good aire about it. If it be so, it seems given by God, as a remedy and reliefe unto the poor people of those hot Countries, who use much to lye abroad and sleep in the fields, against the inconveniences, which otherwise they might be subject unto, by means of another tree, which (as *Oviado* affirms, but nameth not) grows much in the same parts, of such a pestilent and contagious qualitie, that if a man rest never so little under it, he shall be sure presently to feel some indisposition in himself; and if he stayes or ventures to sleep under it, his head and face will swell, and his eye-lids in a short time be closed up: yet is the tree, to look upon, fair and goodly, of a green flourishing colour, well branched and adorn'd with boughs and thick leaves on all sides, and the fruit it self so pleasing both to the eye and taste, that scarce any man, especially that is a stranger, but would be induced to taste of it; which yet no man can doe without danger, it being of such a noxious qualitie, that of it, together with some other ingredients the Indians of old time were wont to make the poyson, wherewith they invenomed their arrows, so mischievously, that 'tis said, scarce one man in fourty that happened to be wounded by them, escaped death. This tree

tree groweth much upon the gulfe of *Uraba*, which lyeth upon the Countrey of *Darien* aboveſaid; and mine Author thinks, that if the unhappie fruit which deceived our firſt parents in *Paradiſe*, be to be found on earth, 'tis as likely to be this, as any other he knows.

CHAP. VIII.

Of Cacao, and the famous drink called Chocolate, of Atolle, and other drinks uſed at the Weſt-Indies.

1. **I** Should commit a great oversight, if in treating of the Commodities and Rarities of the *New World*, I should forget the *Cacao*; which, though it be but a small fruit, ordinarily not bigger than an Almond, and hardly of so good a taste; yet because it is so proper to the Countrey, so plentifully there growing, and likewise so much esteemed and used as it is, almost in all kinde of bartery and traffique, I must not altogether omit it. It is a fruit, which with the Americans is almost every thing; it is both meat, drink, and money. It grows upon a small tree of the bigness and fashion of that of the Pome-citron, thriving

K

best

best upon hot ground, yet in such places where it is well shadowed from the Sun. There be several kindes of them; and by the description which *Hernandez*, or rather *Antonius Recchius*, makes of the *Cacao*, in his general Historie of American Plants, printed at *Rome* 1651. it seems that *Herrera*, *Acosta*, and others are not so exact in their report of this fruit, who generally describe it as a fruit somewhat less than an Almond, whereas *Hernandez*, a Doctor of Physick, and one who lived many yeers in those parts, by command of the King of *Spain*, on purpose to observe the Natures of such Plants and Physical rarities as *America* afforded, makes some kindes of *Cacao* to be as big as a good Mellon or Pompion, and none less than the greatest sort of Apples. To reconcile them I suppose we must say, that what *Acosta*, *Herrera*, and others call the *Cacao*, is but the kernel of that *Cacao* which *Hernandez* describeth; and that there grow many of these lesser *Cacaos* together, in one common husk, rinde, or shell: which *Hernandez* likewise intimates when he sayes the *Cacao* contains within it diverse small parts close compacted together, and afterwards calls that the seed, or kernel, of *Cacao*, which the Americans use instead of money, and whereof they make drink, which is

is the very *Cacao* that *Acosta* and others only mention, without taking notice of any other. It is a fruit of a tender and fat substance, of good nourishment, especially roasted, boyled, or any other way dressed : raw, or eaten out of the fruit only, it causeth, as some say, oppilations and obstructions of the Stomach. Yet the Indian women love it extreemly, and think themselves never well but when they are sucking the skin or film of it, which is commonly a white juycie substance, but sometimes red or Murrey, which they finde to be very cooling to them in those hotter Climates, and have an opinion also that it makes them fair, It is a fruit that lasteth long, and impaireth not much by age ; in respect whereof, and that it is so generally esteemed there, the Indians commonly use it instead of money, as hath been said, buying, or having in exchange for *Cacao* almost every thing in the Market. But the chief reason of its so general esteem and use at the *West-Indies* is, a certain drink they make of it, called *Chocolatte* ; which, because it is a liquor that the Americans extreemly love, and that it begins likewise to be cryed up in some parts of *Europe* for an excellent drink (though all men give not the same report of it) I shall relate, as briefly as I can, how they make it, from

the report of a late traveller in those parts.

2. They take a certain quantity of *Cacao* nuts or almonds, as we call them; which, having well dried, they pound them wth som cods of *Chili*, or long red Pepper of *America*, a handfull of Anniseed, some quantity of Cinnamon, Cloves, and likewise of white Sugar, till they have brought them all into a soft powder, or paste, which they put up into boxes or tablets of what quantitie and bigness they please, laying it first upon paper within the box, from which, upon occasion, the powder or paste will easily separate; but to any thing that is of earth or wood it sticks fast. They put to it likewise certain grains of *Achiotte*, which is another fruit of the *West-Indies*, growing much after the manner of *Cacao*, viz. many grains of it together in one husk or cod, all of them red. This is onely to give the *Cacao* a good colour; and the *Achiotte* is commonly pounded by it self, and sold in boxes, or little round cakes, yet so fine and dry, that it will easily mix and incorporate it self with the *Cacao*, to give it tincture. The better sort, and they that mean to make the *Chocolatte* rich and very pleasing, add many other ingredients; but these already mentioned are the most commonly used; and the *Cacao* thus made up, they
sell

sell usually at four shillings a pound. This is
Chocolatte, or the confectioned *Cacao*. And as
 there is difference in the composition of it,
 so likewise they drink it diverse waies. The
 richest is that which is used by the Gallants
 and Ladies at *Mexico*, viz. to drink hot with
Atole, after this manner. They dissolve a box
 or tablet of *Cacao* in some little quantity of
 pure hot water, standing on the fire; and ha-
 ving first with a Molinet, or some other in-
 strument, stirred it up, and well mixed the
Cacao and water together, they put so much
 of *Atole* into it, as fills up the Cup or vessell,
 and so drink it by supplings very hot. This
Atole is it self a rich and delicious liquor, of
 which I shall speak by and by. But the most
 usual way of drinking it is, to dissolve a box
 or Tablet of *Cacao* in hot water, and having
 well sweetned it with Sugar, to drink it with-
 out more adoe, onely with some conserves,
 or Naples-Bisket, either dry or steeped in the
Chocolatte, as every one please. Sometimes al-
 so they dissolve it in cold water, and stir it con-
 tinually with a Molinet, til it rise to a scum,
 or froth, which they take off, and put into
 some other vessel or cup, and make the other
 hot; which when they have likewise sweetned
 with Sugar, they poure out into the vessel,

where the hum or froth is that was first taken off, and so drink them both together. But this way is not held to be so good, as causing obstructions and windiness in the stomach; whereas the effects of *Chocolatte* well tempered and moderately taken, are said to be, that it fortifyeth and comforts the stomach; which at the *West-Indies*, in many persons, is frequently subject to a *Cachexia*, or fainting some hours after meale, whether it be from any peculiar indisposition of the Aire or Climate, or from some natural weaknes and insolidity in the food or dyet of the Countrey; which though it be for the most part luscious toothsome and pleasing in the palate, in what kinde soever it be, whether of flesh, fish or fruits, yet is it not held to be of so strong and solid nutriment, as the dyet of *Europe* generally is. It is said likewise to revive and exhilarate the spirits very much, to help concoction, to make lusty and corpulent, and may be well taken three times a day, in the morning, a little before dinner, and some three or four hours after, but very moderately, and never exceeding one reasonable draught at a time: and if man hath occasion to watch, or sit up late, it will help him very much to take one cup of it more about eight or nine a clock at night.

3. Now as for *Atolla*, of which I spake even now, it is a drink of it self very delicious, made of the juyce of the young *Maize*, or Indian Wheat, much like unto Almond milke, but somewhat thicker, and so confectioned with Sugar, Spices, Musk and other ingredients of the Countrey, that it is not onely of Admirable sweetness, both for the taste and smell, but much more nutritive and comfortable to the Stomach; and would doubtless be accounted a rare drink in *Europe*, if it would endure the Sea, or could be transported thence, but that it will not: whereas *Chocolatte*, or *Cacao*, made up in boxes, as we said, is sent abroad into *Spain*, *Flanders*, *Italy*, and many other parts of the World. The Commoner sort of Indians have another kinde of drink, which they call *Chica*, a hellish nap, and such, as if it had but some good quantity of Henbane added to the Toade, which they commonly put into it, and steep him there till he be dead and quite consumed, would be a draught fitter for the Devill than a Christian. They take a great Jarre or vessel of the sort of those which usually they have from *Spain*, and put in some certain quantity of water, filling up the rest with *Melasses*, or the juyce of Sugar Canes, and sometimes a little Honey: And beside

these, to give it a strength agreeable to their Palats that drink it, they put in good store of the roots and leaves of Tobacco, and of severall other roots of the Countrie, of strong and violent operation, adding to all, the biggest and blackest road they can finde : and having so done, they close up the Jarre, and let it stand for the space of three weeks or a moneth, till all the ingredients be thoroughly steeped and consumed ; after which, they drink it. And though, for the most part, at the first opening of the Jarre, it gives a sent that a stranger hath much adoe to indure, yet the Indians love it and drink it excessively, having many great meetings onely to drink *Chica* ; and most commonly they carowse so long at it, that they are all of them not onely drunk, which is usual with them, but even raging mad with it ; in-somuch that the Spanish Officers and Magistrates among them labor what they can to prohibit such meetings, but all in vain ; custome and the naturall inclination of the Americans to drink and swill very much, hitherto prevailing against their endeavors. I am not ignorant that some Authours give a better character of a certain drink at the *West-Indies*, under the name of *Chica* ; nor can I say which of them it is, that hath mistaken the name : This

I am

I am sure, the Author whom I follow, pretends to be an eye witness, and to have seen with his eyes that which he reports of the thing it self, viz. the quality of the drink, and manner of drinking it by the Indians : which in truth seems to me to be but a relique of their old barbarity and savageness ; and therefore I shall speak no more of it.

CHAP. IX.

Of the abundance of Cattel at the West-Indies ; and of several sorts of Beasts and other Creatures ; both of Land and Water proper to the New World.

1. **I** Must for brevities sake, and to comply with the intentions of my friend, who calls for these imperfect Notes with some importunity, pass by many particular things, otherwise not unworthy to be known, in the rank of Trees, Plants, and Fruits ; and only refer the reader, desirous of further satisfaction herein, to the elaborate and choise History of American Plants and rarities, above mentioned, written by *Franciscus Hernandez*, a Spanish Doctor of Physick, augmented and accurately

curately commented upon by *Nardus Antonius Recobus* and Italian, *Joannes Terrentius*, and others : proceeding my self to give some briefe account concerning the Cattel, and such other Beasts of *America*, as may seem most worthy of our knowledge. We have said before, that the Cattel of *Europe*, which have been transported thither, have thriven abundantly, and multiplyed into such incredible numbers, as well Kine or great Cattle, as those of the lesser sort, viz. Sheep, Hoggs, Goats, &c. that Swine, and also great Cattel in the Islands, especially of *Hispaniola*, and in many parts of the Continent beside, live wilde in heards upon the Mountains, and may be killed by any body that will take the pains to doe it. Yea, they say that the very doggs which the Spaniards carried over, and which did them not a little service, when time was, against the naked Indians, have multiplyed so exceedingly, that they goe also in companies, like other wilde Beasts, up and down the Countrie, and are one of the greatest inconveniencies to wch the Countrie of *America* is subject, for the mischief that they doe to their Sheep and other small Cattel, being become almost as ravenous and bad as so many Wolves, and seem to be little less than metamorphiz'd into Wolves,

by

by their wild and mountainous breeding, and by reason of a strange fierceness which they have contracted by such breeding and living. So as the Spaniards that brought them thither, are forced to keep guard, and to maintain, as it were, a *defensive warre* against their own Creatures. Nevertheless in the most inland Countries of *America*, where the Spaniards live and many hundreds of leagues from the Sea, or any part of the Islands, there is so great plenty of flesh meat, that for a Ryall of plate, which is but six pence English money, a man may buy thirteen or fourteen pound weight of the best Beef, Mutton, or Pork, in the Market, of an *Obligado* (as they call him) or some of his Deputies, who are men appointed and bound, as we said before, to serve such a Citie, Town, or Place, with flesh meat, at a certain rate, all the year long. So that omitting to speak any thing more concerning forrein or European Cattel at the *West-Indies*, I shall speak onely, and that very briefly, of such Cattel, and other Creatures, as are more proper to the *New-World*, seem either most worthy, or most necessary to be known by us, beginning first with those of the Land.

2. And among the Land Creatures of *America*, I suppose the *Pacos*, or Peruvian Sheep,

Sheep, as they commonly count and call them,
 may by right come in the first place, being the
 most profitable Cattel of the Countrey, I had
 almost said, of the World, affording the In-
 dians both meat, clothing, and service. It is a
 Beast of a reasonable good stature, bigger than
 a Calfe, and somewhat less than a Bullock of
 two year old, and bears a burthen, for the most
 part, of 150 pound weight, without
 the charge either of saddle or shooing, as both
 Horse and Mules require, feeding onely upon
 such meat as they finde upon the roade; and
 in case they finde none, travelling some dayes
 without either meat or water. There are two
 sorts of these *Pacos*; one that bears a good
 fleece of wooll; the other smooth and bare,
 yet somewhat the stronger of the two for bur-
 then. They have long necks like a Camel, and
 are of diverse colours, white, black, grey, and
 spotted. Their flesh is likewise very good
 meat, especially while they are young, and of
 their young ones, which is said to be the ten-
 derest and most delicate that can be eaten,
 though they kill not many of them by reason
 of their necessary service, and so great plenty of
 other meat. But of their wooll they make se-
 veral sorts of cloath; one more gros and com-
 mon: the other very fine, which they call
Cumbi;

Cumbi; and serveth for Carpets, Coverings, and many other uses, lasting long, and having a good lustre, and (which is somewhat more curious) woven on both sides alike, without difference. They drive these *Pacos* in troops, sometimes four or five hundred of them together, or more, laden with Merchandise, Wine, *Maiz*, *Coca*, Quick-silver, and Silver in Barrs, which they carrie from the Mines of *Potozi*, as far as *Ariqua*, upon the South-Sea, which is about threescore or seventy leagues, without any other Convoy or Guide, but onely of a few Indians to drive the Sheep, and some Spaniards to oversee the Indians. They indure frost and cold naturally, as having been bred, and thriving best upon the *Sierra* and *Andes* of *Pern*; where they are seen many times covered with ice and snow, yet never shrinking at it; whereas in the Planes and hot Countrie they dye. They are in truth a very serviceable and good Creature, yet not without some odd qualities, which the Reader, must know, especially that sort of them which are smooth and bear no fleece. If they meet a stranger by the way, they will many times suddenly stand still, and raising up their long necks as high as they can, stare and gaze upon him so wistly, as will make a man laugh not a little to see

see it, and with such a confidence as if he feared nothing; yet all on the sudden a fright takes him, and away he runs with his load upon his back, and commonly so fast that his driver is hardly able to recover him before he hath gained some high rock or Mountain, where the Indian either cannot or dare not follow him for the precipice; and from hence nothing will command him but a Harquebut, which they are oftentimes forced to use, only to get the Silver again, that is upon his back. They have likewise another quality not a little troublesome; which is to grow resty, and lye down under their burthens: though this be but seldom, and, as they say, never but when they are laden or driven beyond ordinary. But if the fit once take him, there is no other remedy but to have patience to sit down by him, make on him, and let him take his own time to rise, which, after a while, he will doe of himself: but to stir or strive with him before, is to no purpose; for though you beat him never so much, or kill him, or cut him in a thousand peeces, all will not make him move a foot: but by bearing him company, and treating him fairely, after two or three hours rest he will rise and goe on his journey as willingly as can be. They are commonly estimated at five or six

six peeces of *Assay*, which may be about forty shillings English money; and at the Indies he that hath but four or five of these *Pacos* to travel withall & carrie Merchandise from place to place, will not count himself a poor man.

3. The *Vicognes* are a kinde of wilde Goats, but much bigger than the ordinary Goats of *Europe*, and without hornes, otherwise coated and haired like Goats. They live wilde on the mountainous parts of *Pern* and *Chile*, being in other parts not so common; and for the most part upon the tops of those highest mountains the *Andes*, nothing offended with the sharpness of the cold or snow. They goe commonly in heards or great companies together, being exceeding fearfull Creatures, and withall very light of foot. Anciently the hunting of them was forbidden to the common People, and reserved onely to the *Inguas* and Lords of *Pern*: now 'tis generally used, whensoever they are found in the lowlands. They are of a dark brown colour, not much unlike to dryed Roses, & bear a fleece of a long shaggie haire, yet so fine that the Indians make rugs and coverings of it, of great value. Their flesh is counted the most dainty sort of Venison, and in some cases medicinal: yet the Indians have an opinion that the very Quilts and

and Coverings made of the wooll or haire of the *Vicugna*, are good against the inflammation of the reins, and for the tempering of all excessive heat; nor is it improbable. For considering what kinde of Pasturage this beast doth naturally delight in, and for the most part live by, which is more than half frost and snow, it may well be thought, that not only their flesh, but every thing else that proceeds naturally of their substance, should in some degree be refrigerative, and retain some cooling vertue in it. Of the flesh there is no dispute to be made, but that it is very soveraign and good in all such cases, viz. of inflammations and immoderate heat. *Acosta* gives a notable instance of it in himself; who having travelled so long upon the *Andes* and those cold mountains of *Peru*, that his eyes were inflamed with the excessive sharpness of the Aire, and become so painfull to him, that they seemed ready to drop out of his head, onely by rubbing them lightly with a piece of the raw flesh of the *Vicugna*, the pain was presently asswaged, and his eyes in short time reduced to good temper. Nor is this the onely good they have by this Beast; for out of his stomach, when he is kild, they take likewise the Bezar stone, true and good, and scarce any way inferiour to that of the *East-Indies*; which,

which, as 'tis well known, is a stone of rare vertue, especially in way of Antidote against any sorts of poison, in all pestilential Diseases, and likewise the infirmities of deep Melancholicke. They finde it commonly of the bigness of a wallnut; sometimes of an Hens egge, or an Orange; but these are rare.

4. There is also at the *West-Indies* another Beast, which they call *Tarugne*; not much unlike to the *Vicugne*; but bigger of body, and likewise of a swifter pace. These live not in companies, as the *Vicugnes* doe, but solitary and single, and carrie their eares hanging down, whereas those of the *Vicugne* are erect and stand up: in other respects they much resemble the *Vicugne*, yeelding likewise the Bezar stone, as the *Vicugne* doth; and which, though it be not altogether so big, yet is thought to be much better in vertue and operation than the other. There are Bezar stones likewise taken very often out of the *Pacos*; but those are less, not ordinarily above the bigness of an hassell nut, or Filberd; and whether so perfect and true in kinde, or no, as the other, I cannot say. The *Taurus Mexicanus*, as some Authors call him, and we must English, the *American Bull*, or *Steere*, is another strange Beast at the *West-Indies*; strange

I call them in respect of our selves, and these parts of the World; for otherwise they are no way strange, being common at *America*, especially in the more Northern parts of it, and of no very monstrous or deformed shape. They resemble the Oxe of *Europe* only a little in the head, and not otherwise; being not only of a far less size than the ordinary Oxe or Bullock, but also of a stature somewhat with the lowest, even in proportion to their own bulke; having a good big full bodie, of the size of some lesser sort of Cows, but very short leggs to bear it; yet we may well count them the natural and proper Kine of *America*. They are of a bright brown colour, or if you please, of a dark yellow, such as the *Italians* call *di colore lionato*, having a thick long hair curled all over their bodie, which at a distance makes them appear somewhat terrible and horrid, but coming neerer them, their countenance seems rather cheerful and pleasing; neither have they any truculency or fierceness of condition, but are as tractable and easily maniable as other Cattel. On their backs they have a little rising or bunch, like a Camel, though I doe not observe that they are any where used for burthen, like the Camel. They breed and abound most in the Province

Province of *Quivira*, which is a plain level
 Countrey in the Northern part of *America*,
 affording little else but pasturage; and from
 hence they are had into other parts, being the
 chief wealth of this Countrey, and subsistence
 of the People; who chiefly live upon this
 Cattel, feeding huge multitudes of them in
 Herds up and down the Countrey, as their
 pasture leads them, using their flesh for meat,
 which is very good, and making a drink of their
 blood.

5. Yet is there another sort of smal Cattel re-
 ceived for Kine at the *West-Indies*, which they
 call *Dances*, but in their figure and shape more
 resembling Mules than Kine; neither have they
 any horns. The hides of these Beasts are much
 used by the Indians for Jerkins, or a kinde of
 upper Garment, which is as good as some Ar-
 mor for them, it being so thick and hard, as it
 is said to resist any weapon that the Indians
 use: like to the *Armadillos* (as the Spaniards
 call them) which are likewise another kinde of
 Beasts proper to the *New World*, much lesser
 than the *Dances*, yet covered all over the body,
 as it were, with a Coat of Maile, that is, with
 a scalie hard skin, which she opens and shuts at
 pleasure, and thereby both covers and defends
 her self upon occasion. The flesh of this Beast

is eaten by some, but not so generally commended for good meat. The *Saynas* are a kinde of Hogge or Swine of *America*, a wilde and fierce Creature, and in this respect somewhat more strange, that their Navil is said to be on the midst of their back. They are armed likewise on their feet with talons, so sharp that a Rasor will not pierce faster or further then they, and with them they doe usually teare and wound such as pursue them, very dangerously, especially if they have not good care and skil in hunting them. The flesh of them, when they are taken, is counted good meat; but to keep it, the Navil in the back of it must be taken quickly out, otherwise it will putrifie in a few dayes. The *Chincelles* are a kinde of Squirrel, of a wonderfull soft and smooth hair, the skin whereof is thought to be very comfortable to the stomach in any sudden pain or fainting, and affordeth a delicate kinde of Furre, much used and esteemed by the better sort. The *Viscachas* and *Cuyes* are the Hares and Conies of *America*, of much bigger size than these of *Europe*, and are hunted there likewise for sport, as here, and their flesh counted not the worst sort of Venison. The *Micos*, or Monkees of *America*, are many and of several kindes; some whereof are said not

not to be much less than the body of a little man, and also bearded under their chaps as venerably as any Goat. They describe a certain kinde of them in *Peru* with long tails, and commonly of thrice the bigness of an ordinarie Ape, of diverse colours, viz. black, grey, bay, and spotted; and report many pretty stories of them; which, if true, argue them to be extreemly ingenious, and to have, at least, some *traites de visage*, as they say, or resemblances of reason. This is common with them; when they have minde to any fruit upon a tree, they get presently up, and winding their taile about the bough, with the weight of their bodie shake as much fruit off it as they think fit. Of another it is said, that seeing a Souldier level at him with his Musket, he snatch't up a stone, and before the Musket could be discharged, threw it at him and hit him full in the eye. *Acosta* tells of another, which they commonly sent to the Tavern for wine, the pot in one hand and money in the other; which errand he would perform most exactly, and with such discretion, that they must be very rude with him, that should get the money out of the one hand, before his pot were filled and put into the other. The Boys in the street would throw stones at him many times in

sport, and he at them again, but never till he
 had first set down his pot; then he would lay
 about him with any thing next hand; nor would
 he offer to take up his pot again, till they seem-
 ed to be quiet, and that his way was cleer:
 and if they gave it him, he would drink wine
 freely; but otherwise not so much as touch
 it. There be also Lyons, Bears, Tygres, and
 other wilde Beasts of prey at the *West-Indies*,
 but neither so great, nor so ravenous as those in
 other parts of the World. The Lyons in *Ame-*
rica are rather grey than red or yellow, and
 have not that long shaggie haire on the fore-
 parts of their bodie, with which they are paint-
 ed. The Tygres are more fierce and cruel;
 but that is only when they are hungry, and seek
 their prey: for otherwise, viz. when their bel-
 lies are full, if the report of *Maffew* be true
 in his *historia Indica*, they are as sluggish and
 heavie a Beast as any, and may be both taken
 and killed by any body almost that will: But
 by his favour I will not be the first that shall
 make tryal. There is likewise abundance of
 Staggs and wild Deer in all parts of the Con-
 tinent of *America*; but, for ought I know, in
 the Islands there are none found.

3. 6. These are all Beasts and Creatures of
 the Land, with which, and infinite others, not

here

here to be mentioned, the *New World* is abundantly stored : Nor doe the Waters afford less variety, either of Sea, or more within Land, *viz.* in the Lakes and Rivers, which are generally so plentifully and well stored with good fish, that there is no Countrie in the World comparable to *America* in that respect. Amongst these the *Cayman*, as they call him, or Indian Crocodile, as the most prodigious and strange, deserves to be first mentioned : yet is he an amphibious Creature, living as well, and perhaps as much upon Land as in the water. It is a most fierce and ravenous Creature, of a vast bulk or bigness, being said to be from the fore part of his snout to the end of his tayle seven or eight yards long; and of such strength, that he hath been seen to take up a living man, lying asleep upon the shore, in his mouth, and to carry him cleer away with him into the water, over to another Island or Rock in the Sea, where he meant to have devoured him : But being shot with a Caliver he lost his prey, and the man was recovered, but dyed soon after. He seeks his prey commonly upon Land, which he kills or drowns in the Water : yet cannot there eat it, by reason of some peculiar disposition of his throat or gullet, which is such, as that it permits him not to swal-

low any thing in the water, but with hazard to suffocate or drown himself. The best is, his motion by Land is but slow, and his body so unwieldy, that he cannot turn himself but with much ado, nor his head to either side without turning his whole body. Yet doe they much mischief, especially about some Rivers in the Provinces of *Mechoacan* and *Tlascalla*, where there are many of them. They say 'tis excellent sport to see a *Cayman* and a Tygre fight, as they happen to doe oftentimes, endeavouring to prey one upon another. The *Cayman*, with his taile, cruelly beats and jerks the Tygre, endeavouring what he can to hale him into the water. The Tygre as stoutly resists him with his paw, and labours to pull up the *Cayman* to land; which for the most part he doth, and then opens him by the belly, which is the only part of him where he can be pierced; his whole body otherwise being armed with scales so extremely hard and thick set, that no Lance, and scarcely an Harquebuz or Musket shot will enter it. The Indians fear him not so much by water as land: for being themselves excellent Swimmers and Dyvers, and the *Cayman* alwaies swimming above water, or very fleet, they make no great matter to encounter him hand to hand in his own element;

element for they easily get under his belly, and with their knives or short Lances pierce him there as they list, and so bring him to Land.

7. The *Tyburens* are a kinde of Shark-fish, of large size, and extremely ravenous. They are commonly ten or twelve foot long, and about six or seven spans broad on the back, being fashioned like a Soale, with huge wide mouths, and two rows of teeth on each side of their mouth very sharp and thick set, and of so great strength, that at one snatch or jerk, they will break the bones or pluck asunder the joints of any Beast whatsoever: They follow the ships at Sea willingly, for the wash and other stuff which the Mariners cast out to them, being so ravenous that they receive everything. *Acosta* reporteth, that out of the gullet of one of them, he saw taken at the same time a great Butchers knife, a long iron hook, and a piece of a Cows head, with one horn still growing upon it. Others tell of Hats, whole Shirts, Leggs and Arms of Men, ropes ends, with many other things of like nature found in the same manner. Yet is the flesh of them counted very good meat, when they are well dryed, and a principall-reliefe in many occasions at Sea; where they are taken without much difficultie, and so bigge, that
many

many times ten or twelve men have somewhat to doe to pull one of them up, when they have him upon the hook. They come likewise out of the Sea up into the rivers, as the *Caymans* doe, and are exceeding dangerous both to men and cattell, that are not aware of them, or happen to ly or sleep upon the banks of any great river, as in *America* it is not ununsual to doe. At Sea they are commonly attended by a smaller sort of fish which they call *Rambos*, which lives by the meat that falls from the *Tyburon*, as the *Jaccall* is said to doe by the Lion.

8. The *Manati*, or *Oxe-fish*, as some call them, is another great fish of the Sea, bigger by farre than the *Tyburon*, headed like an Oxe or young heifer, with two armes, or at least stumpes of armes on each side before, and those as some say, distinguished into severall joynts with nailes upon them, not unlike to those of a mans hand. This is a gentle and harmeles creature, and though of bulk or body not less than a young Oxe or Bullock, yet neither of any feirce or horrid aspect, but rather amiable and cleerer countenanced, as the figure of it in *Hernandez*, and *Laet* sheweth. It cometh frequently upon land, and feeds upon hearbs or grasse, if there be any neer; and being at Sea it swimmes commonly above water and is easily taken.

taken. 'Tis counted for meat the best fish in the World, being as tender and delicate as any veale, or the best young porke; and so like it, that a stranger would verily take it for veale, which it resembles so much every way, both for colour and taste, that it hath been disputed and questioned by some whither it might be eaten on fasting dayes; for that it both eateth hearbs and grasse, resembles flesh so much, and beareth its young alive, suckling them with milk by certain teats which they have, as other Land creatures doe. They finde in the head of it a certain Stone, or hard congelated Substance, which being ground to powder, they say is very good for the stone in the reins, and to provoke urine, especially that which is found in the male-fish.

9. The *Tortoise* is a Fish yet greater than any of these before spoken of, viz. than the *Tyburon* or the *Mauri*, and upon the Shores of the *West Indies*, every where, there are great multitudes of them found. These are a Shell-fish of figure and shape round, carrying their house or cover, alwayes upon their back, and by consequence moving but slowly. They take them sometimes at Sea with Nets made for that purpose only, but most commonly on the Shore, whither they frequently resort in huge multitudes,

tudes, cheifly to lay their egges, which in the sand are hatched with incredible increase, onely by the heat of the Sun : and though they make all the hafte they can to Sea again, asfoon as ever they perceive any body, yet they are easily overtaken, and by turning them with a staffe or pole, upon their backs, which is not hard for them to doe that are acquainted with the manner of hunting *Tortoises*; two or three men will stay and take a whole company of them. They are commonly a yard and a quarter at least in length, and sometime more than twice so much in breadth, and of such bigness & weight, that it will ordinarily require six or seven stout men to draw one of them out of the water; and scarce any found so little, but it will lode two or three men to carry it handsomely away when it is cut in pieces. The flesh of them is very excellent good meat, when it is well powdred, and of no lesse pleasant taste. Every *Tortoise* layeth commonly two or three hundred egges at a time, as big as Hens egges, but round like a ball: good likewise to eate, and have this propertie, that whither boiled or roasted, the white of them is alwaies soft. When the young ones are hatcht, they naturally make to Sea, never expecting that the old one should come to feed them. To this the Tyde helps them

them very much, and there they live and thrive so well, that, as they say, some one of them hath been found of that bigness and weight, that 20. men had much ado to lift it from the ground.

10. There is, besides these, infinite variety of other kinds of fish in the Indian or American Seas; as the *Iguana*, which is a kinde of water-Serpent, of somewhat a terrible and ugly forme, but otherwise not at all hurtfull; of the bigness commonly of an Otter or Fox, the skyn spotted and smooth, and the flesh neither unwholesome nor unpleasant meat. And the *Bobo*, which is a gallant fish as any belong to the Seas, of the length of a mans arme, having one only bone or gristly substance running through the midst of it from end to end: it is of a most tender and delicate substance, white as milk, and as fat as butter; excellent meat which way soever dressed, boyl'd, bak'd, stew'd, roasted, or otherwise: And beside these many others, which I must necessarily pass over in silence; as likewise I might well doe these that follow, viz. the *Niguas* (as the Spaniards call them) or West-Indian Nits; and the *Broma*, or water-worme, two little Insects indeed, and hardly to be numbred in the rank of perfect Creatures, yet such as make themselves considerable enough to be named, only by their troublesomeness;

troublesomness; the one to Men at Land, the other to the ships at Seas. The *Nigmas* are so small a kinde of vermine, that they can hardly be perceived single, nothing neer so bigge as a Flea, which lodge themselves insensibly and unperceived at first, under the nails of Mens fingers and toes, and in other private parts of the body, and multiply in a short time so strangely, that they turn the party to extream pain and torture, and not seldome cause him to lose a joint either of his hands or feet: Nor is it easie to prevent their breeding, without continuall brushing of cloaths and a great care to keep all things about a man, as much as can be, clean and dry. When they are perceived to be bred, the best remedy is counted to be, to pour melted wax upon the place where they are nestled; which, though it scalds and be troublesome for the time, yet when it is cold, it brings away a shoale of that little vermin with it, sometimes four or five hundred of them at a pull. A cheap remedy indeed, if it be so effectual as they say. The *Brama*, or water-worm, is no less troublesome and mischievous to the ships at Sea: it is found generally in all parts within the Tropiques or Torrid Zone, and more especially neer the Line. The English call it sometimes *Arsters*, from what ground

I am not able to say; but the inconvenience and danger which it brings to ships, if not prevented, is apparent and great. They fasten commonly in such great multitudes, upon the planks of a ship, especially betwixt winde and water, where it is not less dangerous, that the ships many times are found covered with them very thick in those parts, and the planks under water wrought like Hony-combs, full of a number of little cells or cavities, which the worms make in them, and in time eat through the planks, be they never so thick, and endanger the ship. They are at first as little as a pins head or less, but grow in time to the bigness of a Mans little finger; and the further they work into a plank, the bigger likewise they grow. And therefore to prevent the inconveniences that would otherwise certainly befall the ships that goe to the *West-Indies*, they usually sheath them, as they call it, before they goe out, that is, they naile or fasten upon the ribs of the ships, under water, and betwixt winde and water sometimes thin sheats of lead, sometimes double planks of good thickness, both within and without. But neither of these wayes are counted good; partly by reason of the overmuch weight or ballast, which they give to the ship; and partly for that they en-
dure

dure not ; for the worm easily works through
 the planks, be they never so thick ; and the
 lead being very thin, washeth away, and in
 time decayes so much, that the worm will not
 be hindred from entring. Others burn the
 outermost planks of the ship, under wa-
 ter and above, to the blackness of a coal, and
 then pitch it all over with pitch : This doth
 reasonable well. But the best remedie of all,
 and that which is now most generally used, is
 that which is said to be the Invention of Sir
John Hawkins, a Gentleman in his time of
 great experience and command at Sea. They
 take the sheathing-board, which they intend
 to lay on, and besmeare all the inside of it with
 Tarre, half a finger thick at least, and upon the
 Tarre another half finger thick of hair, such as
 is commonly used in Morter ; and then nayle
 it down on the ribs of the ship, so far as they
 judge it necessary, driving the nails reasonably
 thick, never above a span distance one from
 another. This is thought both the cheapest and
 securest way : For the Tarre either killeth the
 worm, as some think ; or at least, when she is
 wrought through the sheathing-board, the
 Tarre and hair together so involve and choak
 her up, that she is not able to pass fur-
 ther, but there stops and dyeth : And the
 thinner

thinner the sheathing-board is, so much the better.

CHAP. X.

Of Sugar-Canes , Cotton-Wool , Mulberry trees , and Silk-worms , at the West-Indies.

I. **A**Mong the Commodities of *America*, which we call Mercantile, or such as the Merchants bring from thence, the Sugars are not to be esteemed the least, whether we regard the abundance, or great plenty of the Commoditie it self that is brought, or the extraordinary gain and profit they make that bring it; it being become such a general instrument of deliciousness to all sorts of People, in all Nations, and so exceedingly agreeable to dainty palats. 'Tis said, they buy a pound of good Sugar at the Indies for five or six Maravedes, which make not two pence of English monie; and in some places a hundred pound weight together for nine or ten Ryals of plate, which are not above five shillings; whereas with us in *Europe*, the rate of it is far otherwise. Some say it is no

M

Plant

Plant of the natural growth of *America*, but brought thither from other parts, as namely from the *East-Indies*, or *Canarie Islands*, which seems rather to be a mistake, considering the great abundance thereof which groweth naturally, without any kinde of planting or Husbandrie, in all parts of *Brazil*, *Paraguay*, *Tucuman*, and diverse other Provinces of *America*, both of the Continent and Islands, insomuch that in some places about the River of *Plata*, they report, that the Canes grow to the height of some lesser trees, yeelding a proportionable quantity of good Sugar in every joint or knot of the Cane. For originally, and at first, we must know, this delicious powder, which we call Sugar, is nothing else but the pith or sweet marrow of a certain Cane or Reed, which the Latins call *Saccharum*, borrowing the term, as 'tis thought, from the Arabicks, together with the first knowledge of the Plant, and we commonly the *Sugar-Cane*. It groweth in the manner of other reed up into a long stalk, with joynts and knots in it, commonly seven or eight foot high, and where the Soile is lusty and proper for it sometimes more; of the bigness of a Mans arme in the brawn, and shirping up towards the top as it groweth. The joints, or knots, of the

Cane,

Cane, are, for the most part, three or four inches distant one from another, and within full of a spongy and sweet joyce substance or marrow, of which the Sugar (as we have it) is made. At every knot or joynt of the Cane, on each side, there groweth up a long leafe, sharp at the point, and in the fashion of a wing. The root of it is likewise long and large, and runneth not directly downward into the earth, but rather sloping, and creeping along under the uppermost crust of the ground; out of which at several places there sprout diverse young Stems, or little Plants, which they cut away, both that they should not draw too much of the nutriment from the principal or mother-Plant, as also for that they set them for increase, or a new stock of reeds; And 'tis said to be a year and half commonly before a Plant of the Sugar-Cane comes to its full perfection or growth. But I conceive that to be much according to the nature and condition of the Soile where they grow. For in *Hispaniola* (where indeed the Soile is exceeding lusty and good) 'tis said they grow to a cubits height in less than two moneths space. The substance of the root is likewise very sweet and pleasant, nothing so hard or woody as the roots of some other Canes and Reeds be, but rather

tender and soft; and where the Soile is good and proper for them, one root will beare sometimes twenty or thirty Canes; which in the Island of *Hispaniola* is not unusual; but they never suffer all of them to grow up for the reason abovesaid. They grow both in the Plains and Hill Countrie. in a hot and moist Soile, and require extraordinary Husbanding, and especially that the ground about them be kept clean, and free from annoyance either of weeds or any thing else.

2. The manner of making the Sugar, is commonly thus. When the Reeds are full grown & gathered, they cut or chop them into small peeces at first with a knife, or some other fitting instrument, and afterwards grinde, or break them into yet smaller, in certain huge *Querns* or Mills, which they have for that purpose. These *Querns* goe sometimes with wheels, and are turned about by their Slaves, who tread and labour in them just in the same manner as the Turn-spit Doggs doe in many places in *England*: Others there be that are drawn about with an Horse, or *Bufalo*: But the more general way now used of late for grinding and bruising the Canes, is by water-Mills, which they finde to be far more quick and convenient, especially where they have the opportunity

opportunity of a good stream. When the
 Cane is thus broken and pulverizated in some
 sort, they put it in great Caldrons, or boyling
 vessels of Brass, with some quantity of pure
 water, and likewise a strong lye, or water of
 ashes made for that purpose; and so boyle it,
 till all the sweetness be quite out of the Cane,
 or hard substance of the Reed, and transfused
 into the liquor. When this is done, they take
 it out, and through a colatorie or strayner
 they press out the liquor into certain great
 Keelers, or vessels which they call *Tangut*;
 and afterwards boyle it again, with a less pro-
 portion of lye put to it: the effect of this lye
 is chiefly to raise the scum, and thereby to help
 to clarifie and refine the Sugar, by separating
 of the sediments and grosser parts of it from
 the pure. When they have boyled it to the
 consistency or thicknes of Honey, they strain
 it out again into other vessels, which they call
Tachas, and boyl it again to a yet greater
 thicknes and consistencie, ever adding some
 quantitie of the aforesaid lye, and continually
 stirring and scumming it, as it boyleth. After
 this they take it out, and set it to cool in cer-
 tain lesser vessels which the Spaniards call
Forma, or Plates, which contain not above
 the quantity of two or three pound weight of

Sugar a piece. They are commonly made of
earth, and perforated, or full of little holes
the bottom, through which the thinner
more liquid part of the Sugar droppeth into
other vessels appointed to receive it. It stand-
eth commonly in these *Formes* or Plates about
eight or ten dayes, both that it may be perfect-
ly cooled, as likewise to observe whether
be refined and and purged of its sediments
solly as it ought : If it be not, they boyle
once again as before. When it is cold, it look-
eth like sand, or small gravel of a dark brown
ish colour, only it is softer in the hand, and
crumbles not so harshly as sand doth. The
way to make it white, is by a certain peculiar
earth, or *Marle*, they use, which, having first
dissolved in water, and wrought into a kind
of soft clay; they spread it upon the Sugar
as it lyeth in the *Formes* or Plates, and in time
it brings it to a white colour, yet more or less
perfect, according as the Sugar it self is pure
and fine. And now it is fit for the Merchants
who transport it into all parts of *Europe*
where, by the Sugar-bakers Art and skill, it
yet more accurately purged and refined : but
of this I cannot say much. It is a Merchant
dise of incredible wealth and advantage to
the Countrie; it being no unusual thing for
Iom

some one Sugar-Mill, or *Ingenio*, as they call
it, to afford a revenue of thirty or forty
thousand *Pezas* every year : and though it be
likewise brought from the *East-Indies*, *China*,
and other parts, yet is it not more plentiful in
any Country of the World, than in *America*,
where the Cane grows and thriveth well in all
provinces generally, but most kindly in hot
and moist Countries ; insomuch that in some
of the Islands they count an *Ingenio*, or good
Sugar-Farm, to be no less profitable than some
of their mines of Gold and Silver. Tis said,
that out of the only Island of *Saint Domingo*,
or *Hispaniola*, they transport commonly one
year with another, about a thousand chests of
refined Sugar, beside that of the coarser sort ;
every chest containing eight or ten *Arrobes*
at least, which is twenty five pound weight,
according to English account, and likewise
proportionably from other parts.

3. Cotton-wooll (as they call it, from the
likeness it hath to our ordinary wooll of *Eu-
rope*, especially as to matter of use) is another
very profitable and good commodity of the
West-Indies. Though we call it wooll, yet is
the fruit of a tree, at least of a shrub or lesser
Plant, and groweth upon it in the manner of
Apples or other fruit. It groweth, as I said,

sometimes upon trees, as particularly in the Island of *Pana* in the South Sea, and in *Hispaniola*, but for the most part upon certain lesser shrubs or Plants, not much above a cubit high from the ground, or at most not above the height of a man at the middle. The substance of the Plant whereon it groweth, is very hard and wooddie, and no less thick set with sprigs and branches growing out of it from below, or but little above ground; which, in time are all beautified and covered, as it were, with a purple colour'd flower, yet about the edges, and below at the stalk, yellow; after which appears the fruit in a round cod or husk, of different bigness, according as the Soile is good and proper. If the Soile be warm and very lusty, they are commonly of the bigness of ordinary Apples, or Quinces; if otherwise, less. When the fruit is ripe, the cod opens of it self, dividing into four quarters, and the matter within it appears; which is nothing else but a soft gentle substance, much resembling wool in the touch, lying close, and well wrapt together in the cod: it groweth still, that is, after the cod is opened, to the bigness of a mans fist ordinarily, and then, unless it be gathered by some body, it sheds it self upon the ground, as the Down-Thistle commonly doth, together

together with its seed, which is a little round black substance of the bigness of Conies trot-tles, or some lesser sort of Pease, but flat. This is the seed of the Cotton; and they gather it constantly, and sow it every year, in the same manner as they doe other Grain, viz. upon tilled Land, and in furrows; and in harvest they reap their crop, which they have never above once upon the same stalk or Plant.

4. This woolly substance of the Cotton-Apple, when it is gathered, the Indian women card and spin, as we doe our ordinary wooll in *Europe*; and there are both stuffs and cloth made of it of several sorts and in great abundance; some very fine, like silk; others less fine: and of the coarsest sort of all they make Sails for ships, coverings for their Tents in the field, either when they are marching against an enemy, or following their Herds of Cattel to pasture, and in many other such like occasions. And 'tis commonly the woman's work, not onely to card and spin, but also to weave this cotton into cloath, especially one sort of it, viz. of which they make their *Inns*, as they call them, which are certain hanging Beds, much used by the American People, both at *Mexico* and in all the Northern parts, and likewise

likewise in *Pern*. These are webs of a good strong sort of Cotton Cloath, woven about eight or nine foot long, and an ell broad, with loop-holes at each end; through which, by putting a cord or some small line, they hang them up in their houses upon beams or tainters made for that purpose; and when they are broad in the fields, or hunting in the woods, upon the boughs of trees, or any other thing they finde convenient. They use them chiefly in the field, and when they march against their enemies; for they are neither very troublesome to carrie, and are much more convenient and healthfull, either to sleep in, or lie upon, than the bare ground, especially in those Countries, and in the night time: And when they are foul, they make a lye of a certain great *Cucumber* or *Gourd* cut in pieces and steep a good while in water, and afterwards boyled; with which they scowre and bring them to as perfect whiteness, as any Soap or Fullers-earth would be able to doe.

5. And because the Silks, Taffaties, Sattins, and other fine Draperie of *America*, are not only as good for the most part as those of the Eastern parts, but begin also now to be as great a Merchandise, both from *Mexico* and *Pern*;

Pern; and for that the Countre affordeth such good plenty of Mulberrie trees, both planted and naturally growing (the leaves whereof are the most proper and kindly sustenance of the Worm, which breeds and makes the Silk) I must not pass it over without some short touch at least upon this subject, viz. of the nature of Silk it self, and especially of that admirable Creature *the Silk-Worm*, which breeds it. Silk originally is nothing else but a fine thred spun out of the bowels of a certain Worm, which the Latins call *Bombyx*, we in English commonly *the Silk-Worm*; in same manner as the common Spider weaves his dusty, yet curious web, out of himself. The Worm at the Indies is of the bigness of a Mans finger or thumb, somewhat greater than those of *Italy* and other parts of *Europe*; and is bred two manner of waies: that is to say, by putrefaction, as other Insects commonly are, and also by a more proper and specifical generation. The first is, according to the report of *Pliny* in his *Naturall History*, of the Flowers of the Cypress and Turpentine trees, and likewise many times of the Ash and Oake, which, in time of year, either fall from the trees of themselves, or else are beaten off with rain-showers; out of which leaves corrupted and
 putrified

putrified upon the ground, there is soon after,
 by the heat of the Sun and the exhalations or
 vapours that issue out of the earth, a certain
 Insect ingendred, of the bigness of a Butter flie,
 naked and smooth at first, like a Worm; but,
 in time, coming to be over-grown with a kinde
 of hair, and after that with a thicker and
 warmer coat, which, against winter, the Insect
 works for it self out of the Cotton, or downy
 fillets of those leaves among which it was bred,
 or can otherwise come by. Their other man-
 ner of breeding is by generation properly so
 called, that is, by coupling of Sexes: for there
 is both Male and Female of them. The man-
 ner thus. The Silk-worm, after he hath
 wrought up his bagge, or ball of silk to the
 full, soon after dyeth within it; and though
 he leaves but a poor *Skeleton* or thin *corps* be-
 hinde him; yet out of it, laid in some close
 subterraneous room, where no winde cometh,
 in a few dayes after it is putrified, there springs
 a pair of other Insects or worms of the same
 kinde, though not altogether of the same fi-
 gure or shape; for they are both horned and
 winged. These the Latins call *Chrysalides*,
 and seem to be made only for generation, or
 preserving the kinde: for as much as they doe
 nothing else but gender for the space of three
 or

or four dayes together; at the end whereof the Male dieth, leaving the Female behinde him impregnated and big with a numerous issue of little egges, to the number of one hundred sometimes or more, of the bigness of Miller seeds, or some other smaller sort of grain; of which assoon as she is delivered, she likewise followeth the Male, and dyeth.

6. Out of these eggs (for so the Authors perpetually call them) a new Breed or Stock of wormes, is to be gotten, which is the second manner of their breeding, as hath been said; neither is it the least part of the care and skill of those that keep Silke-wormes, and trade in the making of Silk, to hatch them well: the best way whereof, and most commonly used in *Italy*, and other parts, is said to be the naturall heat of a woman, either in bed, or otherwise carrying them about her, in her bosome betwixt her breasts; especially if she be a woman of good complexion, or a Virgin: and so they are hatched commonly in three or four dayes. They keep the eggs all Winter long for the most part, and without any great inconvenience, not thinking of hatching them, till the Mulberie-trees be well blossom'd, the leaves whereof are their most naturall food, and are seldome out before the latter end of *May*, or beginning

beginning of *Jan.* When the eggs are hatched, and the worm appeares, the next care is to procure it sustenance, whereby it may grow to a bigness, and strength able to work. Their best meat; as I said, is the Mulberry leaves; for though they feed them sometimes with the leaves of *Rubus*, or the great Bramble, with Lettice, and likewise with Nettle-leaves; yet neither doe they thrive so well, nor weave so bigge a web, as they doe, when they are fed with the Mulberry-leaf. They feed with a great appetite, as soone as ever they are bred, eating constantly thrice a day, *viz.* at Morning, Noon, and Night, when they are young; and when they are grown to some bigness, five or six times every day. After they have fed well for the space of nine or ten dayes together, and their bellies are full. They are taken with a kinde of dead sleep: which holds them for the most part three or four dayes together: and though it be a sicknesse and some weakening to them, yet they awake of themselves, and in time by good handling seem to be revived with it, and fall to feeding afresh. And this they doe constantly, that is, feed, sleep, and revive again, three severall times at least before they come to their full strength, or to be able to weave: which is commonly about forty or fifty

fifty dayes after their first birth. When they have had their last and longest sleep; for the space of eight or ten dayes together afterwards they feed the stoutliest, of all, and then quite give over; which they that keep them perceiving, know that now their belly is full, and that they are ready to worke out all again that they have hitherto eaten, with the advantage of a rare interest beside. They know it also by this, that the bagge of Silk, that is to say, the matter out of which the Worme afterward spins the Silk, begins to appeare, and to shine through the lawn coverture or thin sides of the worm. Against which time they that look to their working, have alwayes in readinesse some boughs or branches of the Oke, Chesnut, or any other tree, whose substance is very hard and dry: for upon such they alwayes work best; any degree of moistness, how little soever, whither of the aire, or in their Loomes, or othwise, being counted very prejudiciall both to Worm and to the web. Upon these boughs they lay the Wormes, which presently fall to work and spinning of their thred from one twig to another, backward, forward and athwart, as themselves please, alwaies working inward, that is from the circumference to the center or middle part, till at last they have spun

spun out a round bag of Silk, for the most part
 of an Oval or oblong figure, in which last of
 all they close up themselves; yet still continuing
 to work, till they have either wholly or well
 nigh filled up the bag within, and that the bot-
 tome within themselves, viz. within their bow-
 ells, and out of which they spin, be quite spent
 and unravelled. The bag, or web which these
 Silk-wormes spin is many times as big as a
 mans head all of one thred, so fine, that it can
 hardly be discerned, but by very good eyes, and
 spun out so long without any rupture or once
 breaking off, that, as *Aldrovandus* affirmeth,
 some one, of them might be able to circle about
 the biggest City in *Italy*. The colour of it is
 different, white, yellow, green; or otherwise,
 according either to the nature of the Climate
 and Country where they work, or to the qua-
 lity of the food, with which the wormes are
 fed. This spinning holds them commonly nine
 or ten dayes. When all is done, and they are
 come, as it were, to the last thred of the Clue,
 and that the Worme, by filling up the bottome
 of the bag, hath quite emptied her self, in a
 short time she dies, as we said before, in the
 midst of her self made prison and work: and
 there spring out of her *Skeleton*, after some few
 days, two other lesser Wormes, of the same
 kinde,

kinde, though differing somewhat in shape and figure; whose business is onely to propagate, as we likewise said; and that being done they die: and the Silk-masters unravelling again the whole web, or bag of silk, which the dead Artist hath wrought, order it according to their own skill, as may be most fit for the Merchant; of which I can say but little.

7. This is the generation of Silk-wormes, which as briefly as I could, I have described from the report of divers Authors; especially of *Hieronymus Vida* his curious and elegant poem of this subject intituled *de Bombyce*: and this is the originall and first ground of Silk, that so rare and so much esteemed vesture: it is but the entrayles of a Worme, an effect of putrefaction and rottenness: which if the Gallants and Ladies of the world, when they ruffle most in it, would be pleas'd a little to reflect upon, perhaps it would doe them no harm; and be a means, that while it renders their outward personages comely and fine, as it doth, it should not put their inward and better part so much out of fashion.

8. As for the Mulberry trees, the leaves whereof are said to be the most naturall and kindly sustenance that can be for the Silk-wormes, I have not much to say of them; only

this. They are Trees of somewhat a larger size than ordinary, of a great body or trunk and also of high growth. They beare their fruit in clusters like grapes, being indeed nothing else but a multitude of small berries growing together upon one long bunch, just as grapes doe. The leaves are broad and somewhat thick, of a very green colour, and sharpening towards the end in fashion of a heart seeming to be snipt or cut round about the edges with little gashes, more or less deep, according to the kinde of the Mulberry : for there are two sorts of them, viz the black & the white; so called from the colour of the fruit which they bear : the first whereof, when ripe is outwardly black, but the pulpe of it, or juycie substance within red or of a deep murrey; the other white and of a more pleasant tast, something resembling wine. They grow best in hot Countries: and where they make Silk, there are whole Woods and Groves of them, made or preserved on purpose, onely for the Silk-wormes to feed on. Of all the Trees of the Garden it is counted to be the last that putteth forth its blossomes; which it never doth till about the end of *May*, or beginning of *June*, when all the cold weather is gone: and till then the Silk-wormes also, where they breed naturally and

not

not by the art and care of man, lye dead like
 many little grains or seeds, or like the dung-
 of flesh-flies, upon the ground; but after
 that time begin to revive and shew themselves;
 if there were some naturall sympathy and
 correspondence betwixt the one and the other.
 they grow either naturally of a slip of their
 own kinde, or by the inoculation or grafting
 upon some other Trees: and the white Mul-
 berry is commonly a graft upon that which is
 called the white Poplar. There are good store
 of them said to be at *Bermudaz, Virginia*, and
 in some other English Plantations; which, if the
 planters had Skill, or were enjoyned to mind
 the business, might in time afford great plen-
 ty of Silks, and a richer trade and employment
 in any other Commodity they yet deale in.
 but they think not of it; and therefore it may
 well suffice to have spoken thus much of the
 business.

CHAP. XI.

*Of the abundance and excellency of the Metals
at the West-Indies; especially of Gold and
Silver.*

I. **A**merica or the New World, is doubtless
a Country admirable rich, & which the
Soveraign Creator of all things hath plentifully
stored with all sorts of the most excellent and
rare endowments of nature, as well in the manner
and order of things inanimate or without life
as of living creatures; according as in places
wee have seen already, and may be more largely
and to admiration observed, as the scattered
instances or tokens of his Divine Magnificence
and bounty, in all the Histories and reports of
the Country. But of that wherein it seems
most of all to excell, wee have yet spoken of
nothing viz. of the Metals, which alone were
able to render it the most desirable part of
the World, though it had no other advantages.
It aboundeth with all sorts of these, viz. Iron,
Brass, Copper, Lead, Tin, &c. But the
excellency and richness of the other two, viz.
Gold and Silver, and likewise of that which
as it were, the Sperrm and Solder of these, as

of all other Metals beside, *viz.* Quicksilver, such, that it makes all the rest to be neither much spoken of, nor much sought after in these parts. In which respect I conceive I may be more easily excused, if I pass them over likewise in silence, and make *Those* only the subject of my following discourse, which are so much would to God I might not as truly say *too-much*) the subject of all our desires; *viz.* the Metals of Gold and Silver.

2. Among all Metalls, Gold hath justly the preheminance or first place, in the esteeme of men, by reason of its naturall perfection and purity, which is such, as it renders the Metal in a manner incorruptible and of immortall durance. It is not improbably conceived to be a substance, wherein the Elements, *viz.* Fire, Earth, Water, &c. (which are the naturall Ingredients and constitution of all other sublunary bodies) are mixed with most equall and exact proportion, both for quantiry and quality, that is, there is no more of the substance of any of them found in it, then the condition of the rest will most fitly agree with and endure, and that substance likewise most perfectly defecate and purged by the work of nature from all intrinsecall impurity or corruption, before it meets in composition with

the rest, whence ariseth such a perfect Union and Consolidation of all the Elementall substances in the substance of Gold as is invulnerable, and resisteth the activity of all other bodies whatsoever less purified, and less perfectly mixed, whose contrariety should otherwise cause corruption, or the dissolution of its substantiall and essentiall parts. I say the Elements in the composition of Gold, are both so pure in themselves, and likewise so perfectly mixed in due proportion to another, that it is naturally impossible they should be separate, or dissolved one from another by the action of any other body, in which 'tis evident, they are so perfectly mixed. Yea the Fire it self, the most active of all Elements and Elementall bodies, which incinerates and turns to Ashes the substance of all common Metals, and sensibly wasteth Silver it self, yet prevails not further upon this, than only to refine and purifie it, that is, to deliver it from the adulterate and improper mixture of other Metals, but wasteth not one dram or scruple of pure Gold, though you melt it a hundred times over. This renders Gold in a manner incorruptible and immortall (speaking naturally) and by consequence the most excellent and fitting instrument of commerce and bartery that

wit and reason of man could invent or desire. Second in excellency and in all properties of perfection unto Gold, is that of Silver; a substance, or Metallick body, wherein the Element of water seems to prevail in some undue proportion above that of fire rendring thereby the whole substance of the Metall of a constitution flegmatick, as I may say, and feminine, that is weak and less able to resist contrarieties, as appears by the pale colour of it, and by experience upon all occasions of tryall; yet in comparison of all other Metals (except Gold only) it is with all reason preferred, and unquestionless excels them all both in purity and perfection of mixture, as much as it self is excelled by gold; and perhaps much more. For I observe, the Metals of gold and silver doe (both of them) exceed all the other sorts of Metals, whither Iron, Brass, Copper, &c. incomparably or beyond comparison, as we say; I mean, there never was any certain comparison, or proportion of value, fixed and settled betwixt the one and the other by estimation or the common consent of men, as to say, how much a pound of Gold is better worth than a pound of Iron; or a pound of Silver than a pound of Brass or Lead; not but that it may be easily calculated and known, how much the

one exceeds the other in value; but because it is not commonly known, nor ever was, I suppose, by any general and certain estimation or count among men: whereas the proportion, or difference in value, betwixt gold and silver, hath ever been generally and certainly known among men; not indeed so fixed & certain as to be alwaies, & in all places, one and the same (for it varieth according to times and places, and especially according as either the one or the other metal is plentiful, or scarce, needfull, or counted less necessary among men) but yet a proportion or some certain difference in value hath been ever commonly estimated and assigned betwixt them. Anciently the proportion betwixt these metals is said to have been of *ten for one*, that is, one talent of gold was held to be worth ten talents of silver; so that if five talents of gold were due, and a man would make payment in silver, he should pay fifty talents; and for fifty due in gold, five hundred in silver. *Pliny* reports, that at the first coining of these metals in *Rome*, the proportion was fourteen and an half or fifteen for one; others, as *Herodotus*, speak of thirteen. But that which seems now to be most common at the *Indies*, *China*, and other places, especially where silver is scarce, is the proportion

portion of twelve for one ; So that if an ounce of silver be worth five shillings, as it is said to be, an ounce of gold is worth three pound sterling, & a pound of gold in weight worth no less than forty eight pound of silver in Coyn.

3. Of this Metal, *viz* gold, there is such plenty at the *West-Indies*, that, beside the infinite rich Mines thereof, which they have in all the Provinces of the Southern part, *viz. Peru, Castella del oro, Chile, &c.* and likewise in many of them in the Northern, especially in the Countries of *Nicaragua, Veragua, Guadalaajara*, there is scarce a River of note in all those parts, but the sands of it are well powder'd with gold, and afford good store of it to the washers : yea the very earth, or common soil, which they dig, or otherwise take up in most parts of *Peru*, is so tinged with it, and yeelds ever and anon such grains and crumbings of it, that *Acosta*, an Author no way lavish of his reports, nor of a light judgement, professeth to think there is much more of the metal yet to be discovered than hath been found; judging, as he doth, by the general qualitie or tincture of the Soile. There be three sorts of gold at the Indies, or rather the same gold or metal they finde in three several manners or waies, *viz. in grains*, as they call them,

them, *in powder*, and *in stone*. Gold *in grains* they call certain small pieces of gold, which they finde in the earth, of pure and perfect metal, without mixture of any other sort of base alloy, or at least with so small a mixture, as it scarce needeth melting or refining. These the Spaniards in *America* call *Pepones*, from some resemblance which the grains have to the seeds of Melons or Pompions; though many times they are much bigger, and contain a pound weight or more. They finde silver likewise sometimes in the same manner, *viz* in grains, and pure; but that is but seldome, and a little in comparison of what they finde of the other. Gold *in stone*, is a vein or little Mine of gold, which groweth and spreadeth it self into branches in some flint or other stone, just as silver doth in the Mine. Much of this sort is found in the Mines of *Curuma*, and about the *Salinas* or *Salt-works* of *Pern*, a place so called; where they finde huge stones pierced many times quite through, and interlaced every way with veins of gold, in such quantity, and so richly, that the stone is found, not seldom, to be more than half gold. Of this sort is that which they finde most commonly in the Mines, and is very good gold, but requireth excessive labour and pains to break it from the stone.

and

and to get it forth. Gold *in powder*, is that which they gather in Rivers, Brooks, and other places where any store of water passeth from the Mountains, the streams or torrents whereof, bring along with them, from the said mountains, abundance of this metal in small pieces, which, as it comes, setleth continually in the sands and breaches of the said Rivers, where afterwards it is found. I say the gold it self is most probably thought to be ingendred on the tops of the mountains or mountainous parts of the Earth, and perhaps not far from the Source and Springs of those Rivers in which it is found, and into whose streams it is easily conceived to be devolved in tract of time, by showres of rain, and by many other natural causes; and is not bred or ingendred in the sand or stream it self: And so likewise 'tis observed, they finde most plenty of it commonly after some great floods. Of this sort of gold they gather greatest quantity; there being, as I said, scarce a River of note in the whole Country of *Peru*, or Southern part of *America*, whose sands are not more or less tinctured and enamel'd with it. And as it is most plentiful, so is it likewise, for the most part, very pure, and needs not half that labour of refining it, which gold *in stone*,
 or

or of the Mine usually doth. To gather it, they first of all divert, or turn the course of the stream some other way, and then search the Ford, especially in the breaches, if there be any, and in the cliffs, or hollow places of the banks, where it is likely it may settle in its passage with the waters : and in such places they alwaies finde best store. It is, for the most part, the womens work to gather this sort of gold ; which they doe in this manner. They sit commonly knee-deep in the water, upon the bank of some River, or other place, where they have good store of water before them, with a Trey or little Bole in their hands, cut sloping on either side, but in the midst deep and round, like the bottom of a Barbers Bason, having a good quantity of the sand which they are to wash, continually standing by them, & which is brought to them by some other body appointed to serve them : Of this sand they take what quantity they think fit, and wash it in their Treys, in such manner, as the sand and sandy earth easily washeth away together with the water, and the gold, by reason of its heaviness and weight, naturally sinks down and slips into the deep bottom or bole of the Trey : which when they have done, they deliver it likewise to others that stand there to receive

receive it, and take in more sand. So that to every Trey, or washer of gold, there are three or four persons at least appointed to attend, viz. one to bring the sand from the River to the washer, another to receive the gold when it is washed, one to oversee the work, and another to provide victuals and necessaries for them all. For they stir not from morning till night, from the place where they work. And thus you shall see hundreds of people washing and searching for gold all along the banks of the Rivers. This is generally the way of gathering of gold : as for their manner of refining it, we shall speak of that and the refining of silver all under one.

4. Silver they finde either in veins *stragling*, as they call them, or *fixed*. The first is, when they finde some piece, or a few small pieces of that metal alone ; which when they have taken out of the Mine, or stone, there is no more of it to be found. The other is, when the vein of the metal runneth out, and spreads it self up and down the Mine, in breadth and length, upward, downward, and every way, like the root of a tree with arms, boughs, and branches ; for so for the most part it doth ; and the Mineralists doe commonly represent the Mines of these metals, especially of silver, by the type
of

of a tree planted within the bowels, or middle part, of some great mountain, with its root spreading largely downward, and with its boughs and branches reaching as far upwards, even to the top, or higher parts of the mountain; at which it usually discovers it self, either by some part of the pure vein it self, breaking out, and running along upon the ridges of the mountain, or but little within the surface of the Earth, or else by the signes; which are certain fumosities, or metallick exhalations, which the Mine sendeth forth, of diverse colours, viz. yellowish, white, blew, green, according to the strength and quality of the Mine, and its neer approach to the surface of the Earth. These signes, where they finde them, they call *Marchasites*; and the neerer they approach in colour to the metal which they signifie, the better signes they are accounted to be, as arguing that the Mine is rich, and that the metal within the ground is well concocted and pure. This, we must know, is a general rule to discover and finde the Mines, but not universal. For sometimes they venture to dig, and fall upon very good Mines, without any such special signes appearing, only induced by the quality of the earth, and the natural barrenness of the mountain or place where they

they digge. And 'tis generally counted in Peru a signe good enough, if the mountain or mountainous part of the Earth which they pitch upon (for in such a Soile only the best and richest Mines are found) be very rugged, hard, and sharp, and so absolutely barren, that not a Tree, Plant, or Shrub, groweth on it, and that the grasse (if yet it bear any) be of a faint withered colour, and seeming, as it were, to be parched with drought. These veins lye commonly deep within ground, yet affording very good and pure metal. The principal veins of the Mine, for the most part, run directly North and South, yet branching themselves into lesser boughs several wayes, viz. East, West, and towards all quarters, being found many times five or six foot broad, and seldom so narrow as a span, and this running and branching of the veins in the Mine, they call the *Chase*. The way of digging for the metal is diverse. Sometimes they begin at the top, or upper part of the mountain, where they first observe the *Marchasites*, or signes of the metal, and sink the Mine downward like a well, only taking a convenient space of ground for the platform or compass of the Mine, and leaving *Stanzas*, or places to rest upon and dispatch necessary business, at a certain distance
 one

one from another continually, as they work deeper into the Mine. The other is, to begin to digge at the foot, or neer the bottom of the mountain, in line almost level, that is, sloping a little upwards, and till they come perpendicularly under the place, where they first observed the tokens of the metal; it being a thing generally presumed by the Miners, that though every Mine of metal that may be in the body of a mountain, doth not shew it self by signes at the top, as when it lyes very deep within ground, or is obstructed by some Quarrey of stone or otherwise, yet wheresoever any such signes of it doe appear at the top, there it reacheth to the bottom of the mountain or to the level of the plain ground, at least well nigh to it, and that the deeper the Mine runs within ground, the bigger and better it is, verifying in a new sense the proverb, *The best is at the bottome*. This is counted the best way of Mining, and most commodious in many respects, especially for drayning away of the waters, which are commonly found in the Mineral hills, and doe extreamly trouble the Miners in their work, if they be not diverted; and likewise for carrying the silver out of the Mines when it is digged: neither of which can be done the other way, viz. where the Mine

is sunk right downward, without excessive labour, charge, time, and hazard to the workmen ; but this way are done with ease. For the waters that issue out of the chinks of the mountain, and fall into the Mines, are easily received into certain Cisterns, made for the purpose, and by pipes diverted which way they please ; and the silver is no less easily carried out of the Mine : For the way to the mouth of it being either level or sloping downwards, the poor Miners are not forced to mount with it upon their backs, as they doe the other way two hundred, sometimes three hundred *stades*, or man-heights, from the place where they dig it, upon ladders made of Neats-hides or leather, and from which, many times by mischance, they fall down with it into the Mines upon their backs, and are broken to pieces. If they dig far into the mountain, before they come at the Mine, they are forced to use the Compass to direct their course, as if they were at Sea, according as by the signes they observed the vein to run, when they first found it. They have likewise another advantage of the water, when they dig the Mine this way, *viz.* that by the force of it in the channel or pipes, by which it runs out of the Mine, they turn about certain Mills, and other En-

gins, by which they break and grinde the metal, when they have gotten it out of the Rock, and prepare it for the refining; doing likewise thereby many other necessary busineses appertaining to the Mines. Nevertheless about and neer to the mouth of the Mine, they have houses of all necessary office beside, for the Miners and other workmen; and especially a Smiths Forge, for the sharpening and repairing of their tools: for their labour is excessive hard and difficult, and it requires both edged tools and strong armes to split the hard metal, and break it out of the Mine; which they are forced to doe with wedges, hammers, and all sorts of instruments, and with no less difficulty than they break the hardest flynt, or any other Quarry of stone. They labour likewise perpetually in them, I mean, by turns, so as while one company worketh, another sleepeth and takes rest: but the work it self of the Mine never stands still, but goeth continually on night and day; of which, in the Mines, they know no difference, working altogether by candle-light, as well by day as by night, and without which, their noon and their midnight would be both alike. For indeed the Mines in this respect may be taken for the Suburbs of Hell, by reason of their extream darkness; and

how

how neer soever they be to that which commandeth all things, yet they alwaies want there three of the chief comforts of Nature, having neither Sun nor Light, nor good Aire in the Mines.

5. The last and most curious work about the Metals is the refining of them, that is, the separating and purging them from the mixture of other courser metals, with which they are alwaies more or less ingendred in the Mines. This is done two manner of waies, either by fire, or by Quick-silver. The Indians anciently, before the Spaniards came among them, used no other way of refining but onely by fire, and melting of the metal. To which end they had usually, and have still in many places, to this day, several small furnaces, which they call *Guayras*, built neer the Mines, in places where the winde commonly bloweth; with which, without further trouble or need of bellows, only by supplying them with wood or coale from time to time, as shall be necessary, they make their refining. And they say there is some kinde of silver, particularly that of *Potozi*, which will not be melted by any artificial winde they can make, as of the bellows, or otherwise, but only by that which is natural of the *Guayras*: and therefore upon

the sides of that huge mountain, viz. *Potosi* there are commonly seen five or six thousand of these *Guayras*, or little fires, burning all one time together ; which in an evening, or dark night, they say is a very pleasant spectacle to behold them blazing all at once, like many little Comets, or fixed Meteors of the Earth. But the more common and speedy way is to refine by Quick-silver, which the Spaniards doe now generally use ; both because they have extraordinary plenty of it, and because they finde it draws more silver out of the mine which they refine, than by fire they can doe.

6. Quick-silver among metals is like water among the elements, it is the glue and solder of them, viz. when it is refracted and in due proportion : for otherwise, when it is united and entire in it self, it separates and consumes all of them but gold and silver. In which respect they call it not improperly the *Humidum radicale* of metals. It is a liquid substance, having no certain form or fixed subsistence of it self, but runs continually from place to place as gold and silver, or other metals doe, when they are melted, yet is it the heaviest and most compacted of all other metals ; for they all swim upon quick-silver, and will never sink to the bottom. They say a piece of Iron of two

or three pound weight hath been cast into a
 little barrel or vessel of quick-silver, which
 swim upon the top of it, like corke, or some
 piece of light wood in a vessel of water, and
 would not sink; only gold, they say, will sink;
 which they attribute to a secret propertie and
 sympathie, that is betwixt those two metals.
 It hath many rare and admirable properties;
 but that which may seem most remarkable, and
 which fits it so much for the effect we are now
 speaking of, *viz.* the refining and purifying of
 the metals, is the natural sympathie and in-
 clination which it hath to gold and silver, espe-
 cially the first; which it naturally seeks out,
 where it is to be found, among all metals, se-
 parates and divides it from them all, and it
 self embracing and circling it round about im-
 mediately, and without the mixture or inter-
 position of any thing else but it self. In the
 same manner, but not altogether so intimately
 and perfectly it unites with silver; not pene-
 trating the substance of the metal, which the
 perfect composition thereof, if it be pure and
 fine, resisteth and forbiddeth as hath been said,
 but only embracing and circling about it on
 all sides, yet piercing and consuming the cour-
 ser metals, if there be, and so long as there be
 any of them mixed with it. And though it be

of it self the heaviest of all other metals, yet it soonest transmuted or changed into the lightest substance of all, viz. smoak; which little fire presently doth: and that smoak evaporating, and flying up into any colder Region, or when it encounters any cold metal, at the head or top of a Still, it presently gathers together again, and becomes perfect quicksilver. Hence it serveth so excellently well to refine and purifie both these metals, viz. gold and silver, and likewise to be it self separated from them again afterward. It groweth naturally in the Vermillion, or *Minium*, which is a metal well known & much used for painting & dying; and of which they have admirable rich Mines in diverse parts of *America*; especially those of *Palcas*, out of which they draw yearly, only for the Kings use, a hundred thousand *pezos* of mine; and those of *Guancavi*, which yeeld every yeer eight or nine thousand Quintals, or so many times one hundred twenty five pound weight of quick-silver. And of another they report, that a poor Indian of *Acoria*, who first found it, sold the interest which he thereby had in the Mine, viz. for discovering of it, for two hundred and fifty thousand Duckats, and afterwards commenced a suit against the buyer for deceiving him.

in the bargain ; it being found, that his only interest in the Mine, for finding it, was well worth five hundred thousand pound and more. Before they can use it for the refining & purging of other metals, they must first separate it from the stone or metal in w^{ch} it groweth. This they easily doe by fire, which melts the stone, being first well grinded or broken, & the quick-silver evaporates in smoak up to the head or top of the Limbeck, or vessell wherein it is melted, where encountering a colder substance, it as quickly congregats and thickens again, and would fall presently down again, but that in the discent it is by pipes in the head of the Limbeck or Stillatorie diverted into some other vessels appointed to receive it. They keep it in nothing so well as in leather-vessels : for any thing of wood or ordinary metal it would eate through and destroy : and 'tis said, they spend only at the Mines of *Potosi*, in the refining of silver by it, 6 or 7000 Quintals, one year with another.

7. Silver, if it be good, even when 'tis first digged out of the Mine, is of a white greyish colour, like the best sort of Amber : but if it looks darker, inclining any thing to black or red, it is not counted good, but rather conceived to have in it a great quantity of earth and dross, which must be purged away in the

refining : Nevertheless they count it no ill vein, when every pound weight of metal out of the Mine yeelds but two or three peeces of perfect silver, when 'tis refined. Now the manner of refining metals by quick-silver, and also of separating the quick-silver again from the metals, when they are perfectly refined, is thus. First of all with hammers, and other instruments for the purpose, they break and grind the metals as small as possibly they can, reducing them, so neer as may be, into a dust or powder, which they afterwards sift through a searse of Copper, and then put it into certain Troughs or broad open vessels, being first moistened or well steeped in brine or salt water. This they doe; because the salt hath a certain quick penetrative force in it, and is apt to separate the earthly and droffie parts which as yet stick to the metal, and consequently makes it more fit to receive and draw the quick silver to it. When this is done, they set the vessels which contain the powder, or pulverizated substance of the metals upon little furnaces, with a soft fire under them, which they increase by little and little. This is done, because the fire also is observed very much to help and facilitate the incorporating of the quick-silver, with the metal. After this having the quick-silver

or Mercury (as the Chymists call it from its nimbleness and active, searching into the metals) in a piece of Holland, or some other fine and strong linnen, they press or strain it through the cloath upon the metal in the vessels; upon which it falleth in small drops like dew : some body in the mean time continually moving and stirring the metal up and down in the vessel, while the quick-silver drops upon it, and afterwads also at times, for the space of five or six dayes together : in which time the mercury will be so perfectly incorporate with the metal, and have united it self so intimately to it, that nothing shall be betwixt them, but that all the dross, earth, or other course metal whatsoever, with which it was naturally engendred or mixed before, shall be either consumed or separated from it. After some time, when the Refiners think the Mercury hath done his part, and be perfectly incorporated with the metal that is to be refined, they take the whole quantity or mass of itt together, out of the Troughs or vessels where they are, and put it into certain other vessels, which are bigger and almost full of water ; in which they again fall to stir and to move the quick-silver and metal together up and down the vessel, in such manner, as that the earth and drossie

droffie parts of the metal, separated from the other, doe pass away with the water, and the silver or gold united with the mercurie, as being more ponderous and weighty substances, remain at the bottom : which they take out and wash yet once again in Keelers, or certain broad and deep platters, till it seem thoroughly purged from the earth and droffie substance. The metal thus united with mercury appears like small sand. And because there alwaies slips away some portion of silver and quicksilver with the dross in the washings, therefore they commonly wash that dross over and over again, till at length nothing be lost either of the one or other. When they are thus thoroughly cleansed from the dross, they appear bright and shining, either with a white or yellowish colour, according to the proper nature of the metal that is united with the mercury. And by this they know the metals are refined as much as they ought. Then followeth the last piece of work, which is to separate the mercury or quicksilver from the metal, wherewith it is incorporate, that so they may have the pure metal alone. And this is done thus.

8. First they strain it, as before, through a piece of strong fine linnen, or Holland, as forcibly as they
they

they can by this means if there be any Quick-silver not incorporate and united with the metal, it passeth out as before in little drops like dew which they gather and save; and the rest, *viz.* the silver and quick-silver united remain in one lump together: which with much art and diligence they work last of all into the fashion of a Sugar-loaf, containing most commonly one hundred pound weight in the whole, and made hollow in the midst. This they set upon a furnace, covered with a certain earthen vessell in the nature of a Limbeck or Still, but of the same fashion, and mould that the metall within is, *viz.* of a Sugar-loaf, laying some few coals upon the top of it, and giving a good strong heat to the furnace. With this heat all the quick-silver in the metal presently evaporates and flies up, as we said before, into the top of the Limbeck or earthen vessell, where being refrigerated by the encounter of a colder substance, it quickly thickens again, and distils downwards by the sides of the Limbeck, like the smock or vapour of a pot covered and seething on the fire; and by certain Retorts or pipes framed conveniently in the head or upper part of the said Limbeck or earthen vessel, it is not permitted to fall right down again, but diverted another way, and

and received apart by it self. The silver in the mean time remaining entire upon the furnace, without changing form, but yet abating much of its weight, by reason of the absence of the mercury, which is now flown quite away. They say it abates commonly five parts of six in the weight : so that if the whole lump or loaf of silver and Mercury united, weigh threescore pound, when it is first set on the furnace, when the Mercury is sublimated and gone, it weighs not above ten ; so great is the disproportion or difference in weight betwixt them.

9. For the breaking and grinding of the metalls, when they are first taken out of the Mine, which, as we said before, is a necessary preparative to their refining and incorporating with the *Mercury*, they have many Engins or Mills, some whereof goe with Horses or *Bufalos* in them ; others are turned by water, carrying huge Pestles in them, which beat and break the metall, after the manner of Tanne-mills. They carry commonly twelve or fourteen Pestles apeice, and there are said to be no less than fourty eight of these Mills at *Potozi*, which goe by water, and thirty more which goe with Horses, beside a multitude of hand-Engins : at the City of *Tarapaya*, not farre from *Potozi* ; there are twenty two all upon

upon the water, which doe nothing else but grinde and break the silver, as in so many great Morters, night and day without ceasing. When the metal is thus separated from the Mercury, they count it pure and refined, whither it be gold or silver, and as such melt it again into barres, and carry it to the Touchstone and marking. For it is not yet so perfectly purified and fine, but it must, at least in part, endure one tryall and purging more. This is done by the Assay-master, as they call him, who gives to every peice or barre of silver, its particular Alloy or value, according to which it must be sold, and pass for metal more or less fine and pure, and without which Alloy and mark given it by the Assay-master, it is not lawfull to vend any of those metalls. It's a great and rich Office at the Indies to be Assay-master, and requires likewise a great and exact skill in the metalls, viz. to give the true alloy and value to every peice and barre of metall that is brought. The business is done thus. They bring their metal in barres or ingots to the Assay-master or his Deputy, who cuts from every one of them a small peice of metal, and weighs it exactly, marking well out of which barre or ingot every peice was cut; and then puts them one by one into severall Crucibles or Melting-pots

pots which he hath standing on the fire, marked every one of them according to the number of the barre, to which the peice of metall belongs, that he puts into it. These Crucibles are little small vessells made for no other purpose, but for the last trying of the metall, and most commonly of the ashes of certain burnt bones, which are beaten together and cast into a Mould. To every one of these set on the Furnace, the Assay-master gives a strong and violent fire by which the metal instantly melts, and the Lead, Copper, Tin, or other baser metal, in case there be any yet remaining in it, dissolves and evaporates into smoake, and the silver or other metal, remains in the Crucible alone, now advanced to the utmost perfection and fineness that art can give it, and withall so strangely united and fixed in it self, that though it be liquid and molten, yet they say, it will never spill nor run out, though the mouth of the Crucible should be turned downward, but abides still within it, firm and fixed without loosing one drop, or the least particle of its substance. When the Assay-master perceives by the colour of it (which is then fiery red) that the metal is perfectly refin'd, and that it hath evaporated all that was evaporable by fire in its substance, he takes the severall Crucibles off the
furnaces,

furnaces, and sets them in some place, where they may conveniently cool, and then weighs every piece over again, observing with wonderfull exactness, what every one wants of the weight which it had, when it was first put in, and according to the wast, that is, according to what he finds it want, of the first weight : he gives the whole barre or ingot of metal the alloy, and markes it at what value or estimation of purity and fineness it shall pass. The ballance and weights which they use, are the most delicate and curious in the world, and their graines so small, that they cannot be taken up by a mans fingers, but only with a small pair of pincers, which they have on purpose : and they make the triall for the most part by candle light, that not so much as any suspicion of winde or aire extraordinary should intervene, to move the ballance one way or other. So precisely curious are they in the business ; and not altogether without cause, for upon the estimate of this little piece, the value and judgement of the whole barre, or ingot, for purity and fineness, dependeth, as hath been said.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Of the famous silver-Mines of Potozi, and of the Pearles and Pearl-fishing at the West-Indies.

1. **I** Should conclude too abruptly, and leave the report, which I pretend to make, of the wealth and riches of the New-world very imperfect; if in treating of the subject of metals, I should forget those famous and unparalled Mines at *Potozi*, in the Country of *Peru*. I confesse the Spanish writers seem to me to be a little reserved, and sparing in their reports concerning the Gold-mines of *America*, mentioning them onely in the generall, and not particularizing much of them one way or other; whither out of designe or no, I cannot say: but of these silver-mines at *Potozi*, they are wonderfully liberal and free, as if they meant to make them the admiration and envie of all the world besides. And truly it is not altogether without cause. For doubtless they are one of the most admirable things and discoveries of nature: a treasure, which the Bountifull hand of Divine Providence, had from the beginning laid up there

for the Princes of the Catholique Monarchy,
 and for the defence of the Crown of *Spain*.
 And though it be only one mountain or hill
 of it self, with a little hillock growing out at
 the foot of it, yet is it so infinitely rich, that it
 seems to be all of silver, and would doubtless
 of it self alone, be a sufficient support and re-
 venue for any Prince in Christendome what-
 soever, that had it by him at home in his owne
 dominions. It is but one Tree, yet so excel-
 lently branched and laden, that all *Europe* is
 filled with the fruit of it. In a word it is but
 one generall Mine, yet so admirably weal-
 thy and good, that the treasure of it alone,
 if it could be gotten, would pay three such Ar-
 mies as the State maintaines, and be a compe-
 tent revenue for all publick occasions beside. I
 know my sober Reader will think I speak with
 the largest, and that I use an huge liberty of
 Hyperbolizing in what I say; but it is not so,
 I keepe within bounds, and though I must con-
 fess of my self, I doe not without some diffi-
 culty beleieve what I report; yet I say no more
 than what very grave Authors, wise and sober
 men, that have seen the place, and profess to
 speake, not only of themselves, but according to
 the judgement and estimation of men that live
 here, and are well experienced in the Mines,

will make good by their testimony. I shall need
 to name, onely *Acosta*, who in his naturall Hi-
 story of the *Indies* (*lib. 4. cap. 12.*) tels us, that
 the opinion of understanding men in those af-
 faires, that there are no less than three hun-
 dred thousand Quintalls of metal refined at
Potosi every yeare; and *Laet* in his *descriptio*
novi Orbis lib. 1. cap. 4. tels me, that a Quint-
 tall is a measure, which with the Spaniards in
Amperica containeth one hundred twenty five
 pound weight. Put these together, and the
 summe will be thirty eight Millions, five hun-
 dred thousand pound weight of silver melted
 at *Potosi*, yearly. I suppose it will be said, by
 means of Bullion or metall out of the Mine
 whereof silver, when it is refined, makes not the
 third part. I grant both, being willing to give
 all the advantage to moderate propositions
 that I can. But let us then suppose, that every
 pound weight of metal out of the Mine, yeelds
 a *Peso*, or which is less, but five Shillings, of
 fine silver (which I suppose no man will deny,
 but it doth, one with another) and it will a-
 boundantly justifie what I say, viz. that if we
 had it, it would pay three such Armies as the
 State maintains, and afford a competent reve-
 nue for all publick occasions beside. For it a-
 mounts to little less than ten millions of mo-
 ney.

they, viz. to nine millions three hundred and fifty thousand pound by account; which under favour I humbly conceive is an Income thrice as great as the State expendeth yearly one way or other. And otherwise they confess comonly, that the Kings annual revenue out of this only Mine (which is but the fifth part) is above a million one year with another.

2. *Potosi* is a Mountain in the country of *Charcas*, a Province of *Peru*, in the Southern part of *America*. It lieth about sixty or seventy leagues distant from the *South-Sea*, and about twice so many from the *Atlantick*, or Northern, (of which we shall speak more in due place) being of a soil, when the Mine was first discovered, extremely dry, hard and rocky, and every way as unpleasant to the eye as might be; and so utterly barren, that it yielded no kinde of commodity or fruit outward. And though it lie within the Tropiques in the twenty first degree of latitude, yet is the climate about it very cold, and the place in the months of *June*, *July*, and *August*, constantly shewred with rain. The colour of the Soil for the most part of a dark red, and the whole fashion of the mountain somewhat resembling a pavillion or round Tent, with a

point sharpening still upwards in the manner of a Sugar-loafe; being in height from the plain ground, about a quarter of a Spanish league, and in the compass at the bottom a full league or more; and at the foot of it on the one side, there groweth out a lesser hill, which the Indians call *Guatma Potozi*, which signifies the *little* or *younger Potozi*, which hath veins of good metal likewise, but *stragling* here and there in divers parts of the mountain, and not *fixed*, or running in continued branches, as those of the great *Potozi* doe. It is a place in it self, or to outward appearance, that would be thought altogether uninhabitable by reason of the unpleasantness and barrenness of its outside: but its wealth within hath so peopled the round about, that there is not any Town at the *West-Indies*, of greater resort than it, nor better supplied with all sorts of things, either for necessity or delight, having Flesh-meat of all sorts, Fowle and Venison in abundance, variety of choise Fruits, excellent Wines, with all kinde of conserves and other delicacies besides. The dwellings of the Spaniards and Indians who come thither onely for pleasure, or for the gain and trading of the Mines, are said to extend two or three leagues in circuit round about the foot of the hill: the Mines where

were first discovered by a poore Indian about the yeare 1546, accidentally, as it might seem, in this manner.

3. A certain American of *Chumbivilca*, in the Province of *Cusco*, named *Gualpa*, was hunting thereabouts for venison; and being forced to use his hands to climbe up a part of the mountain that was rocky, and had some few bushes growing upon it, by chance did hold upon a little shrub, which grew out of a vein of the silver, and strained himselfe so much to get up, that he pulled up the branch by the roots, perceiving in the hole or place where the root grew, some quantity of metal; which upon better veiwand some experience he had of the Mines at *Porco*, not above six leagues distant from thence, he found to be very good: whereupon he began to look better about him, and found presently scatter'd up and down on the surface of the earth, severall other pieces of the same metall, but a little changed in colour, by reason they had lain open (a long time perhaps) to the rain and weather; which yet only upon carrying to *Porco*, he quickly found to be good metal, and what a brave fortune he had met with by his hunting. And for some time he managed his business warily and happily, drawing silver con-

tually out of his Mine, as much as he could
 desire. But it was not long before a companion,
 or friend of his, whose name was *Guanca*,
 perceived so much of it, that he made shift
 to become Sharer with him in the Mine; and
 they two enjoyed for a while the richest Mine
 in the world; and might have done so much
 longer but for their own covetousness and
 dissention. It happened that the part of the
 Mine, which this New-comer *Guanca* had cho-
 sen proved not so much to his liking, as he ex-
 pected, and therefore he desired to share
 common with *Gualpa* in his Mine; which was
 not better metal than the others was, but more
 easie to get forth: but *Gualpa* refused; and
 the other was so much provoked upon it, that
 being but a Servant to one *Villareal* a Spaniard
 of *Pardo*, he presently discovers the whole be-
 liefs to his Master: who thereupon making
 search, and finding the metall good, and the
 Mine likely to be rich, immediately repaired to
 the Kings Officers, makes known the Mine
 and procures his Servant *Guanca*, to be en-
 rolled first discoverer of it; and together with
 him undertakes the vein, as they call it, that
 procures so much land about the Mine to be
 marked out and allotted; as the Law allowed
 unto those that first discover a Mine, which

some certain yeards round about the plot, and to those that will undertake to dig and search. By this means they become Lords of the Mine, having liberty to dig and draw forth the silver as their own, paying the King his tribute, which is the fifth part of what they draw forth.

4. There were presently upon this three or four other principal veins of the Mine discovered upon this Mountain; of which, that which is called *the rich one* they report, that at first it ran along in a ridge, above the surface of the earth or plain ground, the full height of a Lance, three hundred foot together in length, and thirteen or fourteen foot broad, continuing likewise in this proportion of bounthy and thickness above fiftie or threescore stades, or so many times the height of a man within ground. They had digged by the year 1588. two hundred stades deep into the ground, still following the Mine; which because it runs not directly downward, but sloping somewhat in the mountain, they suppose it will be above a thousand or twelve hundred stades before they come at the root of the Mine, or the foot of the hill. This Mine yielded at the first one hundred and fifty, or two hundred thousand pesos every week into the Register of the

Contrabation-house, as they call it, and the King, by the year above-said, had received out of it no less than a hundred millions of pieces of Assay, that is, if I understand my Author aright, so many millions of such pieces as they carrie to the Assay-master, to be tryed and marked by him, when it is refined : which helps well to verifie what he saith in another place, that in the Fleet of the year 1587, in which *Acofta*, came from the Indies, there came along with it eleven millions of Treasure, of which neer the one half belonged to the King. The labour in these Mines, as I intimated before, is excessively difficult and hard, the Aire they have very gross, extreme cold and unwholsome for any body not uled to it : they work night and day without ceasing, only by Candle-light, without other knowledge or distinction of day and night, save what they gather by their work, or by their wearines, and desire to be at rest. But that which seems most grievous of all is the labour and danger of carrying the metal out of the Mines ; which they doe thus. They have Ladders of three branches or rows, made of Neats hides, so strongly twisted in thongs, that it yeelds not to wood for strength or toughness, and supposed to endure the aire of the Mines longer than

than wood would doe; these are commonly
 ten stades high, and at the foot of them there
 is a kinde of Scaffold or stage built in form of
 a Gallery, with seats and other conveniences,
 to rest upon. The rows of the Ladders are so
 framed together with wood, & at such distance,
 that, if occasion be, they may both mount and
 descend together. Every man carries the
 weight of fifty or threelcore pound of metal
 upon his back, tyed up in a Wallet or cloath,
 in such manner cast over and fastened to his
 head, as he is sure enough for losing his charge,
 and the whole weight of the metal resteth up-
 on his shoulders behinde. They mount com-
 monly three and three together, the fore-man
 carrying the light, which is a candle so fastened
 to the thumb of one of his hands, as he may
 use all the other part of his hand to hold by;
 which is more than needs. For many times,
 in such great altitude, going or coming, their
 hold slips, or by some other mischance, the
 poor Miners come to the ground sooner
 than they would, losing their lives by the fall,
 or at least are so maimed and broken with it,
 that many times death were better than life to
 them. This was at first the manner of working
 and laboring in the Mines at *Potosi*, till they
 had digged in several veins above two hundred
 stades

stades deep within ground : Since that
 time, to remedie the inconveniences and trou-
 ble that came by carrying out the metal at the
 Top of the Mine in so great an height, they
 have invented *Saccabons*, as they call them,
 which are certain counter-Mines, as it were
 wrought in from the sides or lower parts of
 the mountain, in a level line towards that part
 of the mountain where the vein of the metal
 runs, and to which the Mine that was begun
 at the top is brought. By this means they enter
 the Mines now to work, and export the me-
 tal with much more ease, and less danger than
 formerly, both at *Potozi* and all other places
 generally, where there are Mines. These *Sac-
 cabons*, or cross-Mines, are commonly about
 eight or ten foot in bredth, and somewhat
 more than a stade in height; which they keep
 shut at several places with dores, for the secu-
 rity of the passage. One of them, *viz.* that
 which was made to meet the *rich vein*, as they
 call it, is said to have been above twenty yeers
 in the digging and making; containing well
 nigh three hundred yards in length, before it
 came at the vein of metal; in all which way
 they were forced to make their passage and
 work through the hard and flinty bowels of
 the mountain, with excessive toyle and labour;

and

and the *Succabons* of the other Mines cost not much less either of time or pains : So great charges, pains, and peril, are men content to be at for a thing of naught ; for that which is nothing else, for the most part to them, but an instrument of trouble, vexation, and sin.

5. Something must be said likewise (before we leave this subject) of the *Jemmes* and precious Stones, that are found at the *New World*, they being so considerable a part of the riches and wealth of it. These are chiefly (at least for ought I yet perceive) *Emeralds* and *Pearls* ; of which there is so great plenty at the *West-Indies*, that the abundance of them makes them the less esteemed, verifying herein a pretty passage of storie, reported to have happened betwixt a Spaniard of the *West-Indies*, and an Italian in *Italy*. The Spaniard was newly come from *America* richly freighted, having brought over with him, amongst other things of value, a great quantity of fair and goodly *Emeralds* ; whereof shewing one (a very fair stone) to the Italian, who he knew had skill, and used to deale in such commodities, he asked what it was worth ? The Italian, upon sight of it, answered roundly, he thought it worth one hundred *Duckets*. Being shewed another of more exquisite lustre and form, he

he prized it at three hundred : Whereupon the Spaniard, having good store of them, and tickled with hopes of extraordinary gain by them, would needs carrie the Merchant home to his lodging, and shewed him a casket full of them. The Italian seeing such a quantity of them together, Sir, said he, If you have such store, I will give you crowns apiece for them, and they will not be worth much more either to you or me : intimating thereby, that stones are chiefly estimated according to the raritie and scarceness of them : which was very true, though it grieved the Spaniard not a little. The Emerald, according to the report of *Pliny*, if it be a right and perfect stone of that kinde, is the most pleasant and delightful Jem to the eye that is, of an exquisite verdure or green colour ; yea, they say, it is not only agreeable and pleaseth the sight very much, but that it attracts it also with a strange kinde of efficacy, so as a man seems not satisfied with looking upon it, but desires to view it still more and more ; that it fortifieth the facultie visive, and restoreth it when it is dim and decayed by overmuch attent looking upon any thing : and therefore Lapidaries, and men that cut or engrave fine stones, have usually some of them lying by them, only to refresh and
revive

revive their sight, when they perceive it fail them, or grow weak at any time. To which end, *viz.* the better to please and affect the sight, they are shap'd or cut, for the most part with some hollownes in them, whereby the *visual rayes*, as they are called, being united and strengthened one with another, doe give the greater lustre. They are said to appear both fairer and bigger at a distance, nor doe they change or abate their lustre, either for Sun, shade, candle-light, or otherwise, as most of the other sorts of Jemmes usually doe, more or less : and as they are commonly of the bigness, so are they not much under the value of a Diamond, if they be of the best and perfect sort of Emeralds : For all are not such. There are some of so exquisite and admirable lustre, as nothing can be desired more ; in others the green is more dark and clouded : and lastly, some are spotted ; but those are commonly held to be counterfeit. Those which the fortunate *Cortez*, after the conquest of *Mexico*, presented to his new Spouse, the Lady *Jane Zuniga*, were extraordinary, and thought to be the rarest in the World. They were five of them, of most exquisite colour and perfection ; and of such bigness, that they were wrought into several figures and shapes of things : *viz.*

one

one in the fashion of a Coronet, or little Crown; another of a Rose, fair and great; the third was like to a Fish, with the eyes of gold, counted an admirable piece of Indian work; the fourth was wrought in the fashion of a Bell, having for its clapper a great and rich pearl, engraven round about with this Motto, *Sea Bendito qui te criava*, in English, *Blessed is he that created thee*; the fifth was like a Cup, with the foot and brim of gold, and four little chains of gold, all joyning together at the top or cover of it, in a great pearl. 'Tis said that the Merchants of *Genoa* offered no less summe than 40000. Duckets for one of them, which they would have presented to the great Turk; but were refused: And though I confesse there be some of much greater bigness mentioned in *Pliny*, yet doubtless these were very rare stones both for bigness, workmanship, and perfection. They grow usually in other stones like to Chrystal, and the greatest plenty of them is in the new Kingdom of *Granada*, and in the Province of *Veragua*, and especially about the Citties of *Manta* and *Port Vini*; where there is a whole Country, or little Province, which they call *de las Esmeraldas*, or the *Land of Emeralds*, from the abundance of them, that are supposed to be there, and which

the

the Spaniards had not yet subdued, when my Author wrote : and they send usually three or four hundred weight of this kinde of Jewels only into *Spain*, one yeer with another.

6. Of Pearls, which anciently were counted the only Jewell, both for price and excellency, and such as Princes only, and persons of very noble quality used, there is such plenty of them at the new World, that the very Negro Servants, or Slavees, are said to weare Chains and Bracelets of them. These grow in Oysters, or a certain shell-Fish much resembling Oysters, and bearing that name ; and are fetcht up from the bottom of the Sea by the poor Indians that are forced to dive for them. 'Tis true, the Indians, through necessity and custome, are become wonderfully apt and ready at this work, even almost beyond beleefe. They will descend commonly ten or twenty fathom deep into the water, and stay there an houre, or the better part of an houre, plucking the shell-fishes from the hard Rocks, or searching for them in the gravelly corners and chinks under water, till they have filled the satchels or baggs which they carried down with them ; or that want of breath enforceth them to come up. Howbeit if the Sea be very deep, or not calm, they finde much difficultie to abide

abide under water, and therefore tye commonly certain Stones of good weight about them, only to keep them down, which are exceeding painfull to them all the time they are under water, beside the danger they are in to be destroyed by the Tyburons, and other preying fishes, whiles they are there. But when they have a minde to come up, 'tis but unloosing of the stones, and they mount presently, being counted the most expert Swimmers in the World: To which likewise their own dry, wither'd, and lean complexions doe dispose them very much; being, for the most part, of very thin and spare bodies, and 'dyeted on purpose for this service, with the dryest meat which their hard Masters can procure for them, and that also in small quantity and with but scant allowance. The Pearls differ much from one another, both in fashion, colour, bigness, and polishing, and they seldom finde two of them altogether alike: when they doe, it much enhaunceth the price and estimation of them, even where they are most common; a pair of such Pearls having been valued, at the Indies themselves, at a thousand Duckets. They are counted the most excellent which are of an Orient white colour, bright and cleer, like the finest Allom, bigge, weightry, and especially

cially if they be round; which is counted such a singular raritie in this Gem, that *Oviedo* tells us of himself, he once bought a Pearl at the Indies, not much bigger than the pellet of some Cross-bow, for which he gave 650 times the weight of it in good gold, upon no other special account, but only because it was round. They fish for Pearls upon all the coasts of *America*, and the Islands generally more or less, but especially in the South-Sea about *Panama* and the Island *Margarita*, so called from the abundance of them which they have found there: and in the North-Sea, about the Islands of *Cumana*, *Cabagna*, *Rio de la Hacha*, and other places, which are commonly found bigger than those of the South Sea. And although it be the opinion of some, grounded upon the covetousness of the Spaniards, when they first came into those parts (who spared not the very seed or mother of the Pearl it self, but swept & took all that came to hand) that the profit of Pearl-fishing is much decayed, of what it was; yet if it be true what the same *Oviedo* tells us, I should think it may be otherwise, and the trade good still. For he saith, These Pearl-Oysters come by shoals successively into the places where they are usually taken; and that

Q

though

though a bank in the Sea be swept never to
clean of them by the Pearl-fishers, yet not far
off they finde alwaies more, and likewise in
the same place good plenty of them again in
a short time.

The End of the first Part.

AMERICA:

¶ The second Part.

Containing
The Topographicall
description of the several
Provinces, both of
the Northern and
Southern part:

*With some other Observations
incident thereunto:*

By N. N.



Printed by R. Hodgkinsonne for E. Dod.

AMERICA

THE HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENTS TO THE PRESENT TIME

BY JAMES M. SMITH

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOLUME I

NEW YORK

1854

Published by J. M. Smith

100 N. 3rd St.

NEW YORK

1854

Printed by J. M. Smith

100 N. 3rd St.

NEW YORK

1854

Printed by J. M. Smith

100 N. 3rd St.

NEW YORK



CHAP. I.

Of the generall division of the New World into Continent and Islands ; and of the two parts of the Continent, viz. the Northern and the Southern.

I.



America, or the New World (as we have said before) is it self most generally thought to be but an Island (though a very huge one) and to be surrounded on all parts by the Sea : not only on the East, West, and South, (as is already found by experience) but also towards the North ; where it is likewise supposed to be divided from the Continent of *Asia*, by the Sea running between. Nevertheless for distinction sake, and by reason it is of such a vast extent, as that it equalleth and far exceedeth any other part

of the World; how great soever, that is counted or called Continent, it seems not amiss to express the whole under this division, viz. of *Continents and Islands* : understanding by the first, viz. *Continent*, only the main Land, or more principall Provinces of *America*, which lye united together, and extend themselves, in one continued tract, from the Northern to the Southern borders; and by the latter, the *Islands* which lye about the main Land, and though some of them at a good distance from it, yet as well by reason of situation, as for that they were discovered and conquered at the same time with the other, are generally taken and reckoned for part of the *New World*. That which we call the *Continent of America*, is divided generally into two parts, which are two great *Peninsulas*, or *dummy-Islands*, environed on all parts by the Sea, save only in the midst; where they are joyned together by a certain *Isthmus*, or neck of Land, which they call *the Streight of Darien*, lying almost under the *Equinoctial Line*, in some few degrees of Northern latitude : which runneth in length from the district of *Panama*, as they call it, and *Nombre de Dios* to the Southward, about an hundred miles or more, but in breadth from East to West, or from the North to the South

Sea, is nothing answerable; being in some places not above seventeen or eighteen miles over. These two *Peninsulas* are generally counted the Northern and Southern parts of *America*; so called from their situation, in respect of the Equator: the one of them lying wholly Northward of the Equinoctiall Line, and the other, at least for the greatest part of it, Southward. They contained anciently (beside many huge and vast Provinces, governed, for the most part, by Roytelets, or certain petty Princes in each respective Province or Territories, whom they called *Casiques*) two great and mightie Kingdoms; the one of *Cusco*, (generally called the Kingdom of *Pern*, in the Southern part; and the other of *Mexico*, now called *New Spain*, in the Northern: of both which, and likewise of the manner of the first conquering and subduing of them by the Spaniards, when time was, something shall be said in due place.

2. The Mexican, or Northern part of *America*, containeth these several Provinces, viz. 1. *Estoriland*, 2. *Canada*, or *New France*, 3. *Virginia*, 4. *Florida*, 5. *California*, 6. *New Galicia*, 7. *New Spain* or *Mexicana* properly so called; and lastly 8. *Guatemala*, together with some other lesser Islands, so neerly ad-

joyning to the Continent, that they are usually reckoned for part of it, by those which describe the Countrey; and therefore shall be mentioned in their several places accordingly, viz. as parts of the respective Provinces upon which they lye. The Peruvian, or Southern, part containeth these which follow, viz. 1. *Castella del oro*, as the Spaniards call it, or golden *Castile*, 2. *Nova Granada*, 3. *Pern*, 4. *Chile*, 5. *Paraguay*, 6. *Brasil*, 7. *Guiana*, and lastly *Paria*, or new *Andalusia*, as some call it. The Islands which lye further off from the main Land, but yet reckoned commonly for part of the *New World*, by reason they were discovered, as hath been said, and for the greater part conquered and subdued with it, are chiefly those called 1. *Los Ladrones*, 2. the Islands of *Salomon*, which lye in the South Sea; and in the Northern, 1. the *Caribee Islands*, 2. *St. John de Port-rico*, 3. *Hispaniola*, 4. *Jamaica*, and 5. *Cuba*; of all which in their order, according to the method of the latest, and, as I presume, the exactest Cosmographers, viz. of our learned Countryman Dr. *Heylyn*, and his Author *Last*: upon whom I must profess to rest very much in this part of my report, especially as to the site and position of Places.

CHAP. II.

Of *Estotiland*, and the several Provinces
which it containeth.

I. **T**He first Province of the Continent
of *America* towards the North, is
called *Estotiland*; for what reason I must
plainly confess, I cannot so clearly discover;
unless perhaps our Neighbours the Dutch
happened to have the first naming of it, and
that it beareth any signification of its Easterly
lying in respect of the other Provinces. It
containeth all those Regions of the Mexican
or Northern part of *America*, which lye fur-
thest toward the North-East: on which side,
as likewise more directly Eastward, it is wash-
ed all along with the main Ocean, or North-
Sea; having on the South *Canada*, or *new*
France: Westward, and to the North-west,
it is not yet fully discovered: but supposed
either to be joyned to some parts of *Tartary*,
or (which I think is the more common con-
jecture) to be divided from it by the Sea:
which some, presuming it to be but a narrow
Sea, call the *Straits of Anian*, from a Province
or part of the *Asiaticque Tartary*, which beareth
that

that name, and lyeth upon it. On the North it hath a Bay, or large Inlet of the Sea, which the English call *Hudsons Streites* from Capt. *Henry Hudson* an Englishman, who in the year 1610 is said to have sailed in this Sea no less then three hundred leagues Westward, in search of a passage that way to the Kingdomes of *Catha* and *China*; of which we have spoken already, and which was so much endeavoured in those times both by our selves and our neighbours the Dutch: but without success hitherto. The whole Province containeth these particular Countries, if I may so call them, or Prefectships, as some others doe, viz. First, *Estotiland* more properly so called. Secondly, *Terra Carterialis*. Thirdly, New-found land, and Fourthly certain Islands neer adjoyning to the Continent, which they call *Bacallais*.

2. *Estotiland* specially so called, is the most Northerly region of all *America* towards the East, lying betwixt the abovesaid *Hudsons Streights*, which it hath on the North, and *Terra Carterialis* on the South. The soil of the country is said to be reasonably good, and well stored with naturall Commodities, I mean, such as are of necessity and may be expected in such a cold northerly quarter, as Flesh, fowl, and

and good store of Fish in the Sea. Among the Natives of the country there, and some Savage that live wild up and down in the Woods, and go naked; not withstanding the extream cold: but for the most part, they are supposed at least to be more civill. The first discoverers of the country reporting of them, that they both sow corn, brew Beer and Ale, use *Canoes* or little Boats at Sea, by which they trade with *Greenland*, *Friezland*, and other parts at one thousand or five hundred miles distance from them. They are said likewise to have some use of letters, but of a Character proper only to their own Nation, and not understood by any other people beside themselves. Yea they talk likewise, as if they had some knowledge of the Latin tongue; and of certain Latin books in a Library of one of the Kings of the Country: wherein, if there be any thing of truth, (as I hold it not altogether impossible) 'tis likely, some people from the more Northerly parts of *Europe*, that understood the Latin tongue, might in times past be cast on shore, or suffer Shipwrack upon those Coasts; where being constrained to live and abide, they might leave some books, and other monuments of the Language behind them in the Country after their decease. However it be, this seems more certain,

tain; by the report and experience of some English, that the people are generally be found to be more ingenious, to have better judgement in things, and to be much more skillfull in divers Mechanicall arts, than usually in these other parts of *America* they were at first. Among other things they were observed to use a kinde of Dart, or short Javelin, pointed with bright steel and very sharp, which being a kinde of Weapon used only by the people of *Java*, and some other of the Islands of the *East Indies*, it is conjectured, that they have commerce one with another: which seems not altogether improbable. But as for the Towns, Cities and great Castles among them, which some speak of, and of the Temples, wherein they sacrificed men, (though that be an ancient and generall custome among the Americans, and those of this Country barbarous enough to doe it) yet the Reader perhaps will be willing to suspend his beleefe a while: as likewise he will, for the supposed Mines of gold and silver there: (of which at least as it may seem) the Northerly situation of the Country doth not well permit, us to have such strong presumption. Of Brass and Iron, 'tis likely enough there may be good store, if the Country were searched, But as

et the knowledge thereof, especially concerning the more Inland parts; remains very imperfect. Some English Adventurers passing that way, have left names to certain Capes or Head-lands upon the Northern Coasts of it, and that is all: the chief of which are these, viz. Cape *Elizabeth* at the entrance into *Hudsons Streights* Northward. Prince *Henries* Foreland. Cape *Charles*. Kings Foreland with divers others, more to the South. Cape *Wostenholme* and *Digges* his Island about the mouth of the Streight; where it opens it self and disembogues into a large and capacious Bay, called (as abovesaid) *Hudsons Bay*, and dividing these uttermost Provinces of the Northern *America* into two parts, which some call the Eastern and Western point; as may be seen in the Maps. The people of the Country, that are any thing civilized, cloath themselves commonly with Beasts skins, and with the skins of the Sea-calves otherwise called *Morses*; which are a kinde of Fish of an Amphibious nature, much abounding in those Northern Seas, of the bigness of a young Heifer, or Bullock of two yeares old; which they hunt and take in great numbers, especiall where the Whale-fishing is not so good; and draw a good quantity of oile from them, which they call

call *Train-oile*, as they doe from the Whale. The flesh of them is counted reasonable meat, of a taste somewhat like Porke: and each side of their upper Jaw there groweth out a long tooth, or Tusk, crooked and bending downward, not unlike to that of an Elephant; each of them a Cubit long sometimes and more, of a substance white, and very like Ivory; for which it commonly passes. And it were well, if the deceit rested there, and went no farther. For as it seems, there are some that vend it for Unicorns horn and attribute I know not what strange and sovereign virtues to it. An egregious imposture, of which the learned Doctor *Brown* hath likewise (as his manner is) acutely and kindly admonished us. *lib. 3. chap. 23. of his Pseudodox. Epidem.* above mentioned.

3. *Terra Conserialis* is a Province, or Country of this Northern part of *America*, lying Southward of *Essoiland*, and Northward of *New-France* or *Canada*, being so named from *Gaspard Corserius* a Portuguese Gentleman, who in the year 1500 or thereabouts first discovered these parts, and gave name to the Country; but did not touch beside. For returning the next year after, with intention to make a further discovery, he sup-

posed

posed he was shipwracke and drown'd at Sea together with his company; of whom, as *Ossorio* in his history of *Portugall*, witnesseth never any returned or were heard of: and the like misfortune befell his Brother *Michael Corteris* the next yeare after; who setting out two Ships to search and enquire of, concerning the fortunes of his Brother *Gaspar*, perished likewise in his design, being himself lost and all his men: upon which disasters the Portughees quite give over the Country, and the French succeed them, naming the Country *New Britain*, in reference to *Bretain* in *France*, which it seemes, was their native Country. This was about the year 1504. The soil of this Country is very lusty and good, for all sorts of grain generally, and yeelds a great advantage to the Husbandman, but not without good paines taking in the tillage and managing of it: For which reason it is called by some *Terra di Labrador*, or the land that requires Labourers; in allusion perhaps to *Terra di lavoro*, or the Country of *Campania* in *Italy*, so called from a like property. The people of the Country, of themselves barbarous and savage enough, are said to be civilized and bettered in their manners by the conversation of the French. They live much upon Fish, are excellent Archers, extremely

jealous of their Wives, and dwell for the most part in Caves under ground ; beeing also much given to Soothsaying & Divining; further than which they seem not to have much knowledge, or sence of any thing that concerns religion. The Country was first of all discovered by *Sebastion Cabot*, at the charges of *Henry* the seventh, King of *England*, as hath been said; but it was only discovered, and the design laid wholly aside, by reason of some domestick troubles, and a Warre which the King then had with the Scots : whereupon the After-comers tooke leave to enter. The Towns or places, which the French have built since, are cheifly, 1. *Brest*, 2. *St. Maris*, and 3. *Cab Marzo*, as they call it ; of which there is little more to be said.

4. *Terra Nova*, or *New-found land*, the third part of this Northerly Province of *America*, is a great Island, lying on the South of *Carterialis*, from which it is divided by a Frith, or narrow Sea, which the French call *Golf de Chastiaux*. This place is chiefly frequented for fishing ; of which there is such plenty all along the Coasts of this Island, and likewise of *Terra Carterialis* adjoyning to it, that the huge Shoales of Cod-fish doe sometimes stay their Ships under sail; besides great store of other fish,

fish, both of salt water and fresh, as namely Herrings, Salmons, Thornback, Smelts, excellent Oysters, and Muscles that are said to have a kinde of Pearl in them; but of what quality or value, doth not so well appear. The Land within is likewise reported to be a very good Countrey, plentifully stored with Deer and other sorts of Venison, Pheasants, Partridges, Swans, with variety of other good Fowl; lastly of a temperate Aire and Soile, not barren: only the people of it are said to be few, and to inhabit chiefly the Western and North-west parts of it. But this perhaps may be rather out of fear, and to avoid the conversation of Strangers; which at first they would not endure, but fled at the sight of them, being themselves altogether Savage and wilde. But since 'tis said, they grow more tractable, and will be hired, in time of yeer, by the Portuguese, and other Nations that fish commonly for Whales in the Bay of *St. Laurence*, and other places thereabouts, to help them in the opening of their Whales, boyling the fish, and drawing out the Oyle; wherein they that will be got to it, are extremely diligent and ready to take pains. They are commonly of but mean stature, full eyed, somewhat broad-faced, and for the most part beardless. Their

R

houses

houses are only certain long Poles, set an end sloping upwards towards the top, where they are fastened together, and covered downwards with the skins of Beasts, having in the mid^dst their hearth, or place to make fire upon. But that which is most remarkable about the Island, is the many and fair Havens which it affordeth on all sides for shipping : in which respect it is thought, for the bigness, scarcely to be paralleld by any other Island or Place in the World : not indeed beautified with any great Towns, or stately buildings, as some are, but affording commodious and secure station for the tallest ships that come before it ; the chief whereof are these : 1. *La Roignese*, or *Rennosa*, as it is called, six leagues Northward of the *Cape Roy*, which lyeth at the South-East angle of the Island ; a place much resorted unto for fishing, from all parts. 2. *Porto formosus*, or the fair Haven, three miles Northward of the other ; capable of great ships, and bearing at least four or five miles within Land, or more. 3. *Thornbay*, called otherwise by the Portuguese *Enseada grande*, or the great Bay, for distinction sake. 4. *Trinity Bay*, on the North of the *Cape St. Francis*, called by the Spaniards *Baia de la concepcion*. This is likewise a very large and capacious

cious Bay, five miles over, where it is narrowest, having divers great Rivers falling into it, and some little Islands lying scatteringly up and down in it, yet safe, and affording very good Anchorage and riding for ships in most parts. 5. *Bay Blanche*, as the French call it, or White-Bay, on the North of the Cape or Promontory of *St. John*. On the South side of the Island, and Westward of *Cape Rays*, there is, 1. *Port Trespasser*, an excellent and secure Harbour, having alwaies a reasonable deep Sea, without shallows or Rocks. 2. *Port St. Marie*, six leagues distant from it. 3. *Port Presenza*, by others called *Placenza*, on the other side of *Cape St. Marie*, towards the West. 4. *Port du Basques*, or the Biscayners Haven; and lastly on the West side of the Island, after you have doubled *Cape Rays*, there is at *Georges Bay*, all of them secure stations, large and of great resort.

5. Before this Island, right over against *Cape Ray*, at a distance of twenty four leagues or more, there lyeth an huge Bank or ridge of Land, extending it self in length, out of the Sea, some hundred of leagues, if my Author mistake not; but in breadth not above four or five and twenty, when it is broadest: and in other parts much less, sharpening towards

each end into a Conus or narrow point. It is counted one of the Marveils of the Sea ; which round about it, at some distance, is very deep, and hardly to be sounded, especially between *the Bank*, (for so they commonly call it) and *Cape Ray*, but drawing neerer it grows by degrees more and more shallow ; insomuch that nigh the Land, there is not much more water than is necessary for the ships riding. It runneth out in length, as was said, from North to South, from fourty one degrees of latitude to fiftie two ; and round about it there lye scattered a multitude of lesser Islands, which Sir *Sebastian Cabot*, when he first discovered the place called by one common name *Los Baccaleos*, or the Islands of Cod-fish, from the great quantity of that sort of fish bee there found ; which was such, that they hindred the passage of his ships, and lay in such multitudes upon the Coasts, that the very Bears would come and catch them in their claws, and draw them to Land. This place I say, with the rest was first discovered by Sir *Sebastian Cabot*, upon the English account ; howbeit the matter happened to be lay'd aside upon the aforesaid occasions ; till in King *Henry* the eight his time, it was revived again by *Thorn* and *Eliot*, two Merchants of *Bristol*, but

without success : after which the Portu-
 gheses, French, and other Nations, resort to
 it and change the names which the first disco-
 verers had given to the Bayes and Capes
 thereabouts. But the English not relinquis-
 hing their pretensions of primier discovery and
 claim, about the year 1583 Sir *Humphry Gilbert*
 took possession of it again, in the name of
 Queen *Elizabeth*, and prohibited all Nations
 the liberty of fishing there, without the Queen
 of *Englands* leave. But he being unhappily
 wracked in his coming home, the business was
 again discontinued for a time, viz. till the
 year 1608, when it was undertaken anew by
John Guy, another Merchant of *Bristoll*; and
 with so good success, that the Colony in a
 short time were well furnished with Wheat,
 Rye, Barley, and other grain of their own
 sowing, with Turnips, Coleworts, and aboun-
 dance of other necessary things, not without
 some probable hopes of Metals, a certain and
 plentiful trade of Sables, Musk, and other rich
 Commodities, and such excellent good fish-
 ing, especially for Codfish and Ling, that 'tis
 said some English-men doe ordinarily take
 two or three hundred of them in the space of
 three or four houres; which from thence they

conveigh, as a sure and ready Merchandise, into
most parts of *Europe*.

CHAP. III.

Of Canada and the Countries belonging to it.

1. **C***anada*, or *New France*, is a large Province of this Northern part of *America*, bounded Northward with *Terræ Corterialis* abovesaid, and on the South with that part of *Virginia* which is called *New England*: on the East it is washed with the Ocean or North Sea; the Western borders of it being not yet fully discovered or known. It hath its name from the River *Canada*, which watereth the whole Province, running through the midst of it, and is counted one of the fairest and greatest Rivers of *America*; where yet it is supposed there are the fairest and greatest of all the World beside. It hath its head or spring in those undiscovered parts of this Northernly tract, which remain yet unknown; and runs generally with a large and violent Stream, having in it many Cataracts, or falls of the Water.

Water, as it were, from some Rocks lying in the channels which renders the passage of it up the stream extremely difficult, and downwards no less dangerous. In some places it swells and spreads it self out into large and huge Lakes, containing, some of them, one hundred miles in compass, and having diverse small Islands scattered up and down in them: after which it is presently again reduced into a narrower channel, of a league or two leagues broad generally. Thus it runneth turning and winding up and down the Country, as 'tis supposed, some hundred of leagues from its head-spring; till at last having received into its channel many lesser Rivers of the Countrie, it empties it self into a great Bay, which they call the Bay of St. *Lawrence*; being at the mouth no less than thirty or forty leagues broad, as it is said, and one hundred and fifty fathom deep of water. The French Authors report, that it hath been actually searched for above one thousand and two hundred miles upward from the Bay: and that the Savages living thereabouts, doe speak confidently, of certain Bayes of Salt-water more towards the South; and of great vessels which they have seen that way: which, if true, must necessarily be from the South Sea. But I per-

ceive not that any farther enquiry hath been made by them about it ; as doubtless a business of so great importance would deserve, viz. to finde such a commodious and easie passage into the South Sea, and thereby to the other Indies. Therefore I suppose those relations are not much credited. The Countrie on both sides the River, is reasonably pleasant and fertile, especially on the South or South-west of it ; where it seemeth to be a little mountainous, the ground ascending, for the most part upwards from the River, and rising with many little hills, clad most of them with Vines, of which there is great abundance in the Countrie, and other trees, and divided frequently with other lesser streams, which at several places doe all of them fall into the great River. In this Countrie the French hitherto, I suppose, have made the greatest discoveries of any other Nation ; yet not the first, but following the tract of *Corterialis* and Sir *Sebastian Cabot*, that went before them. The whole Countrey containeth these particular Provinces, or subdivisions, viz. 1. *New-France*, more especially so called. 2. *Nova-Scotia*. 3. *Norimbegua* : and 4. some Islands adjoyning.

2. *New-France*, specially so called, lyeth on the North-side of the River *Canada*, somewhat

what inclining towards the East; and on the
 South of *Terra Corterialis*: but in the We-
 stern, or more inland parts, the River divideth
 it in the midst, the French having seated them-
 selves on both sides of it. The Countrie na-
 turally aboundeth with Staggs, and other
 sorts of wilde Deer, Bears, Martens, Foxes,
 and Hares; of which last there is such plenty,
 that the French call one of the Islands, *Isle aux
 Lièvres*, or the Island of Hares. They have
 likewise good store of Conies: Fish and Fowl
 in abundance; only they complain the Winter
 is long, that the Snow lyeth upon the ground
 sometimes till a good part of *May* be past, and
 that the North-west winde, especially in Win-
 ter, blows very cold there, and brings aboun-
 dance of Snow with it. The Countrie hath
 very much wood; but otherwise of a Soile not
 unapt for Corne, especially Pulse, and such
 like grain; of which it affordeth extraordina-
 rie increase. But the peculiar Commodity of
 the Countrie seems to be their Chains of
Esurgnay, as they call it, which some say is
 only a kinde of shel-fish of exceeding white
 colour; yet found to be of soveraign vertue
 for the stanching of blood: in which respect
 they make both Beads and Bracelets of them,
 and not only use them, but vend them also as a
 chief

chief Commoditie ; though others, as *Lau*, out of the Commentaries of the French-men themselves, seem to report otherwise, and to describe the use and making of *Esfurgony* only as a piece of superstition among the Savages, about some dead men. The People, when the French came first among them, were altogether rude and barbarous, as the most part of them continue still ; living generally without houses or any certain places of abode ; goe naked, save only that they have a little piece of some Beasts skin bound about their middle. Those about the Sea coasts live most upon fishing ; which they practise in certain light boats, which at night they are able to draw to Land, without much help ; and but turning the bottom upward, they serve them for an house to sleep in. The Countrie affords good plenty of *Maiz* in many places, but it is said to be the Womens work both to digge the ground and sow it ; the Men giving themselves to no kinde of labour, but only of hunting and fishing. Among many other bad enough, they are said to have one vile custome among them, which is, that the young Maidens, when they are fourteen or fifteen yeers old, have leave to prostitute themselves to all Comers ; and that they marrie not usually, till they have
thus

thus satiated themselves with promiscuous lust for the space of 4 or 5 years together : after which , notwithstanding they take husbands, and prove so extremely loving and constant (if a man could believe it) that they never marrie twice , but after their rude manner mourn for their Husbands all their life long.

They have some few Towns ; the chief whereof are these, viz. 1. *Hochelaga*, said to be the seat and residence of a King of this Countrie, which at least some of the Natives acknowledge, and exceedingly reverence, carrying him sometimes in great pomp upon their shoulders, sitting upon a Carpet of Beasts skins. This Town, if there be any such (for it must be confessed, the reports concerning it are not so certain) is situate far within Land, at a distance of six or seven leagues from the River *Canada* ; and is a kinde of fortified place, encompassed about with a three-fold course of Timber-ramparts one within another, of about two Rods high from the ground, with cross planks or pieces of Timber, laid out on purpose to hinder the scaling, or getting up, by an Enemy. Towards the top there is, as it were, a Scaffold or Gallery framed, from whence they may throw down stones (of which

which there is alwaies good store ready) or what else they have to annoy the assaylants. It hath one only Gate for entrance, and that likewise well fortified, after their manner. There are said to be in it fifty or threescore great houses, built, (as the manner of the Americans generally is, that use houses) in a square figure, each side being about fiftie foot long or more, and sixteen or twenty broad, but not many stories high; and in the midst of the Court or void space, a place to make their fire, and doe other necessary work about it. The Countre round about this Town pleasant and good. 2. *Stadac*, or as some call it *Stadacone*, another Town of the Natives, not far from the Isle d'Orleans Westward. 3. *Quebeque*, another old Town, which the French, having first expelled the Natives, and made it a Colonie of their own, have since named *St. Croix*. 4. *Tadoussac*, a Town lying at the mouth of the River *Saguenay*, having a small Haven, but very safe, and capable of ten or twenty good ships. 5. *France-Roy*: This is little more than a Castle and Fort, built by *Monsieur Robeval*, a French man, at his first landing there, about the yeer 1540. And lastly *St. Lewis*, a place which the French designed for a Colonie, in the year 1611, under

er the command of *Monsieur Champlain*; but it came not to effect, by reason of the *Iroquois*, a Savage and war-like People on the South-side of the River *Canada*, who doe often trouble and alarme the French in their Quarters, and particularly hindred this Plantation.

3. *Nova-Scotia*, or *New-Scotland*, is a part of this Province of *America*, so named by Sir *William Alexander*, a Scottish Gentleman, to whom King *James* gave it by Letters Patents, in the year 1621, being made afterwards Secretary of State for *Scotland*; and after that, by King *Charles*, Earl of *Sterling*. It containeth all that part of the Province of *Canada*, or *New-France*, which the French call *Accadie*, or sometimes *Cadia*, (which properly is only a Peninsula, or half Island lying thereabouts) together with so much of the main Land as lyeth between the River *Canada*, and the Bay *Francoise*, that is, reaching from the River of *St. Croix*, upon the West, to the Isle of *Assumption* in the East. This was done presently after that Sir *Sammell Argall*, Governour of *Virginia*, had outed the French of all their possessions on the South-side of *Canada*, that is, such as lay within the bounds of *Virginia* and *New-England*, where they had not any

any thing to doe; much less to molest or make-warre upon such people as lived quietly under the protection of the English. But the Patentee after some time, finding that to plant and maintain Colonies, was no business to be undertaken by a single person, sold *Port-royal* which was the principall place he had there, to the French, and wholly discontinued his endeavours in the rest, which the French therefore have since possessed.

The places of chief importance in this Country are, 1. *Port-royall* above mentioned. This was first a Colony of French, planted there, by *Monsieur de Montz* about the yeare 1604, but being destroyed by the English from *Virginia*, about the yeare 1613. it was granted to *Sir William Alexander*; who as we heard, sold it back again to the French, and they took possession of it the second time, and upon another account. Howbeit, if report speak true, as the affaires of the world are always uncertain, it is now again very lately taken from them by some English, commanded by *Major Sedgwick*. It hath a reasonable good Haven belonging to it, of a mile broad and more within, and two miles in length: the mouth or entrance being somewhat narrower, but neere upon a mile over, 2. *St. Lakes Bay*, so named

named by the Colony which Sir *William Alexander* sent thither ; but by the French *Port au Monton*, or *Sheeps Bay*. 3. *Gaspé* or *Gachepé*, another fair Port right over against the Isle of *Assumption*.

4. To the Southwest of *Nova Scotia*, and Northward of *Virginia*, lieth the Conuntry of *Novimbegua*, so generally called, and as it hath been thought, from a great City or Town in this Province, or from a River bearing the same name. But as for the first, later discoveries finde none such ; and as for the River that should be called *Novimbegua* ; it is likewise swallowed up in that which is more truly called *Pemtegouet* : which is indeed a fair River running many miles together in this Tract, but not well navigable above twenty or thirty at the most, by reason of the Cataracts or great falls of water which it hath ; and which are an inconvenience incident unto many other Rivers of the New World, and doth make them at severall places unpassable. The mouth of this River is said to be eight or nine miles broad having many little mountainous Islands lying before and about it ; one whereof the French call *La Isle haute*, from the great height which it seemeth to beare to them at Sea. Westward of this River *Pemtegouet*, at a distance

stance of twenty or thirty miles there empty
 eth it self another great River into the Sea
 which they call *Quinnebequi*, but the English
 as *Laet* reporteth, *Sagadahoc* : betwixt and
 about which two Rivers the cheif and most
 known parts of this Country of *Norimbega*
 lyeth, saving only a small Southerly Tract up
 on another River which they call *Chovacco*.
 The aire of this whole Country is found to be
 of a very good temperature, and the soil, if
 it were used, supposed to be no less fruitfull
 especially towards the Rivers, and where it is
 not mountainous or overgrown with Woods
 as it is in some parts ; where yet it affords
 much good Timber, abundance of Walnut
 trees, and of other Nuts, Firre-trees, Berch
 with much other necessary and usefull wood :
 elsewhere there is as much good pasturage and
 very fair plains ; only the Sea Coasts are said to
 be shallow and full of sands ; so that the sail-
 ling neer is generally accounted but dange-
 rous ; and which I suppose, may be some rea-
 son why there occurs not upon these Coasts
 any particular Ports or havens, which as yet
 Authors seem to have thought worthy of their
 report.

5. There are adjoining to these parts of
Canada or *New-France*, certain Islands, which
 although

Although they come not under any one common name, yet it seemes most fit, that we should take notice of them as Appurtenances to this Country. The Principall of these are, 1. *Natiscotec*, or the Isle of *Assumption*, situate in the very mouth of the great River of *Canada*. It was discovered first in the yeare 1534: by *Jaques Cartier* a French man, and contains in length thirty leagues or more, but in breadth not much above seven or eight. The land is for the most part very plain and level, and of a soil fruitfull enough if it had Inhabitants: plentifully stored both with fowl and fish, having convenient roades but no very good harbours for Ships to stand and abide in.

2. *Ramea*. These are, as it were, a Fry of Islets, or lesser Islands, lying together in the great Gulf or Bay of *Saint Lawrence*, on the South side of *Natiscotec*; being a place much resorted to by the French, for the *Morse fishing* in time of the year, of which we have spoken something already. They are so numerous upon these Coasts, that a small French Bark, 'tis said will catch one thousand or five hundred of them in a few houres; and so large, fat, and unctious withall, that of the bellies of five or six *Morses*, they make an Hog's-head or more of *Trans-oile*, as good as that which they have

of the Whale ; beside the benefit of their flesh which they say, especially if it be young, is tender and sweet as Veale. The skins of them they dress, as we doe our Oxe-hides ; and they say, they are twice as thick and serviceable upon any occasion. 3. *Brion*, a small Island Southward of the *Ramea*, not above two or three leagues in length, and about so much likewise in breadth, but of a rich Soil and excellent good pasturage, though shaded in some places with many tall and lofty trees of several kindes; having another lesser Island neighbouring upon it, which they call *Isle Blanche*, or the white Island, of like fertility with it self. 4. *Insula Britonum*, or *Isle Breton*, called also sometimes the Isle of Saint-Lawrence. This lyeth to the South-East of the Isle *Brion*, of a Triangular forme, containing about eighty leagues in compass ; mountainous for a great part of it and rugged, but in the Valleys more fruitfull and pleasant; having no Rivers, at least not any that are much known, but instead thereof, embraced much with armes of the Sea, and thereby not unlikely to be well stored with fish upon the Coast of it. In the midst of the Country there is a great Lake, which contains within it many lesser Islands. The Woods well replenished with

with most sorts of Deere, a kinde of black Foxes, and abundance of the American Birds, which they call *Pengwins*. The chief Port, or Haven of it is New-port, called by the French *Port aux Anglois*, because much frequented by the English in regard of the fishing. Lastly, there is the *Isle de Sable*, so called by the French, as 'tis supposed, from the Sands which lye so much about it, containing about fifteen leagues in compass, and distant from *Breton-Isle* not much less than twenty or thirty leagues; held to be of an unsafe landing, by reason of the said sands lying about it: and therefore though the planting of it hath been twice attempted by the French, and once by the Portuguese, yet the business never had success.

The Inland parts of this whole country of *Canada*, are still in the hands of the Savages or Natives, and not much discovered further than to know the names of the people: the chief whereof that occurre, are these, *viz.* the *Iroquois*, a stout and warlike people on the North-east of *Norimbegua*, often molesting the French. The *Souriquois* and *Eteschemins* in the Country of *Accadie*, or *New-Scotland*, who are more their friends, and doe help them sometimes against the *Iroquois*. Beside on the banks, and about the River of *Canada*, there are the

Algonnequins, the *Algoingequins*, *Quenigebins*, *Attagopantans*, and many other Montagnets of such harsh names, that we should be enforced almost to pass them over in silence, though they otherwise deserv'd to be named: only this we may observe in the general, of the Savages of these parts of *America*, viz. That as ignorant and barbarous as they are, yet they have made shift to discover the Factions, Emulations, and Enmities that are amongst the European People that come thither; and are able to make such advantage of it, by siding some of them with the one, and some with the other, that they all preserve their liberty by it: So that as yet the footing which either the French, English, or any other Nation have among them, seems rather to be for the security of their own abode and trading where they live, than to give them any absolute right of possession; much less any general command of the COUNTRY.

CHAP. IIII.

of Virginia and the Countries thereto be-
longing.

1. **V**irginia, so named by Sir Walter Rawleigh, about the year 1584, in honour of our Maiden Queen Elizabeth, of famous Memorie, is a fair Province of this Northern part of *America*; bounded on the North with *Canada*, on the East with the Sea called *Mare del Nort*, on the South with *Florida*; the Western confines of it being not yet known; but supposed, and perhaps not altogether improbably, to extend themselves as far as the South Sea. The more inland parts of the Countrie are mountainous and somewhat barren; but otherwise thick set with Woods, and those as well replenished with wild Beasts, Venison, and a sort of People, not much less wilde and savage than Beasts: the Maritime parts more plain and fruitfull. The whole Countrie extends it self from North to South, that is to say, from the Southermost parts of *Norimbega* to *Florida*, full ten degrees of latitude, viz. from thirty four to forty four, containing thereby inclusively six hundred

common or English miles : being sub-divided into three inferiour Provinces or Parts, which are these, viz. 1. *New-England*, 2. *New-Belgium*, or *Nieu-Nederlands*, as our Neighbours call it. And 3. *Virginia*, properly so called to which, because it is an English Plantation, and a part of this Western World, it shall not be amiss to add the *Bermude* Islands.

1. *New-England* is that part of this Province of *America* which lyeth next to *Canada* or *New-France*, by which it is bordered towards the North, Eastward with *Norimbergue*, on the South and South-west with *Nieu-Nederlands* : the other borders, that is, directly Westward, remaining yet unknown. The Country lyeth about the middle of the Temperate Zone, betwixt the degrees of forty one and forty four, being naturally of the same degree of heat with *France* or *Italy*, parallel to which it lyeth in the Western Hemisphere ; but yet these heats so moderated and allayed by the coldness of the adjoyning Seas, that the Country generally is found very agreeable to English bodies. The Soil abundantly fruitfull, not only of the natural Commodities of the Place, but likewise of all such as are transported thither out of *England*. Great store of Woods and Trees both for Fruit and Building ; plenty

of

of Deer; and of Turkies, Partridges, Swans, Geese, Cranes, Ducks, and Pigeons, so great abundance, as serve the Inhabitants almost to excess. But the Commodities whereby they chiefly maintain their Trade, are rich Furs, many sorts of good Fish, some quantity of Amber, Flax, Linnen, Iron, Pitch, Masts, Cables, yea and timber for Shipping. In a word, it is supposed by those which seem to understand the Country well, That there is little room for *England* by the way of the Sound, but might be had from hence, at easier rates and less trouble, if the business were well considered. The Natives of the Countrie are said to be much better disposed, more tractable, docil, and apt to be perswaded to civility, than their Neighbours; especially when they are fairly dealt withall, and not provoked into distemper by rough handling. The Countrie on the Sea side replenished with very good Havens. They report, that in the space of 70 miles, there are no less than twenty or twenty five good and secure ports, some of them capable of five hundred or a thousand sail of ships, and fenced from the fury of windes and Sea, by the interposition of certain Islets, which, to the number of two hundred at least, are said to lye scattered up and down upon that Coast.

The

The places where the English have since seated themselves, are, 1. *St. Georges Fort* where the first Plantation was settled, at the mouth of the River *Sagadahoc*, in a kind of *Peninsula* or half-Island. 2. *New-Plimouth* seated no less commodiously upon a large and spacious Bay, called by the Natives *Patuxet*. It consisted at the first building but of nineteen Families only, but is now improved into a handsome Town. 3. *New-Bristol*, upon the Sea side also, but lying more Northerly than *Plimouth*. 4. *Barstable*. 5. *Boston*: And lastly *Quillipiack*, which by the name seems to have been some old Town of the Natives, who upon a great mortality happening among them, are said to have deserted these parts of the Countrey but a few years before the English came thither: It lyeth upon a Bay called the Bay of the *Massachusetts*, and is at present possessed by the English.

This part of *Virginia* was first discovered by Captain *Gosnold*, in the year 1602. Four years after that King *James* granted it by Letters Patents unto a Corporation of certain Knights, Gentlemen, and Merchants to be planted by them and managed to the best advantage of the Publique: In which Sir *John Popham*, Lord chief Justice of the Common-Pleas,

Pleas, being one of the principall, by his encouragement, and chiefly also at his charge a Colony was sent thither in the year 1607, under the Presidencie of Captain *George Popham*, and Mr. *Raleigh Gilbert* : but the President *Popham* dying the next year after, and not long after him the Lord chief Justice likewise, who was the chief Patron of the work, the Colonie returned home : and though afterwards it was attempted several times, yet never could they finde success in their endeavors, nor be settled in any form, till the year 1620 : When, by the building of *New-Plimouth*, and some more particular care had of the business, by several encouragements sent from thence to bring on others, and by reason of some domestick motives which perswaded many people to leave their Countrey and goe that way, it is grown at last to a very probable and hopefull condition of good subsistence for the future, being, for many temporal respects, worthy of all favour and cherishing by the State.

3. *Novum-Belgium*, or *Nieu-Nederlandt*, hath on the North-East *New-England*, on the South and South-West *Virginia*, properly so called ; taking its name from the *Netherlanders* or *Dutchmen*, who began their Plantation

Plantation there about the year 1614 : The
 Countrey, as they said, being then void, and
 therefore free for any body that would take
 possession of it : Notwithstanding which pre-
 tence, they were scarce warm in their Quar-
 ters, when Sir *Sam. Argall*, Governour of
Virginia, having first spoyled the French in
Accadie, as we said, disputed the posses-
 sion with these also. And although they plead-
 ed *Hudsons* right (who by Commission from
 King *James*, and upon an English account,
 had lately discovered those parts) and pre-
 tended they had not only bought all his Cards
 and Maps of the Countrey, but all his Interest
 and Right also, and had fully contented him
 for all his pains and charges in the discovery;
 yet the said *Hudson*, being an English man,
 and acting all that he did, by Commission
 from the King of *England*, upon debate it was
 concluded, That the Land could not be alie-
 nated after discoverie, without the King of
Englands consent; especially it being but a
 part of the Province of *Virginia*, already pos-
 sessed by the Subjects of *England* : So that
 they were forced to wave that title, and the
 Dutch Governor submitted his Plantation to
 his Majestie of *England*, and to the Governor
 of *Virginia*, for and under him : Upon which
 Terms,

Terms, for a good while, they held it. Afterwards, upon confidence, it seems, of a new Governour sent from *Amsterdam*, they not only failed to pay the promised contribution and tribute, but fell to fortifie themselves, and to entitle the Merchants of *Amsterdam* to an absolute Propriety and Dominion of the Countrie, independent of any other; building Towns, as *New Amsterdam*, raising Forts, as *Orange Fort*, neer that branch of the *Noride River*, which they call *Hell-gates*. Complaint whereof being made to King *Charles*, and by his Embassador represented to the States, they disown the business, and declare by publique instrument, that they were not interessed in it, but that it was only a private undertaking, viz. of the West Indian Company of *Amsterdam*. Whereupon a Commission was granted to Sir *George Calvert*, made Lord *Baltimore* in *Ireland*, to possess and plant the Southern parts thereof, lying towards *Virginia*, by the name of *Maryland*; and to Sir *Edmund Loyden* to plant the Northern parts towards *New-England*, by the name of *New-Albion*: Which makes the Dutch the second time seem willing to compound; and for the summe of two thousand and five hundred pounds, they offer to be gone, and leave all they

they had there. But by advantage of the troubles in *England*, which then began to appear, and soon after followed, they not only goe back from their first Propositions, and make higher demands, but also most maliciously and wickedly (as some report) they furnish the Natives with Arms, and teach them the use of them, as it may be thought, expecting to use their help, upon occasion, against the English. An Act questionless of very pernicious consequence, not only to the English Adventurers, who have since been much damaged and prejudiced by the said Natives in their Plantations, but also to the Dutch themselves: who, as 'tis reported, were the first, or with the first, that smarted by it: The Savages, being thus arm'd and train'd, first of all falling foule upon them, destroying their Farm-houses, and forcing them to betake themselves to their Forts and Fastnesses: So that at present there is but little good account can be given further of the State of this Country.

As to the nature and quality of the soil, it differeth not much from the parts about it; the temperature of the aire and commodities of the Country being generally the same, which *New-England* or *Virginia* yeeldeth. And as for

or Towns and places of abode, it doth not
 appeare, that either the English or Dutch have
 as yet set themselves much to building in this
 Country. What the English had done before
 our late troubles at home, it may be feared, is
 wholly ruined by the misfortunes which befell
 them there : And for the Dutch, although they
 make large reports of the Country, and chal-
 lenge a huge Circuit of land under the name
 of the *New-Netherlands*, and title of the
 States ; yet I suppose they have had their hands
 so full of other business of late, that they have
 not added much to what they had, when our
 troubles began ; which was only *New-Am-*
sterdam, as they call it, and *Orange-Fort*, afore-
 mentioned ; nor is it so certain, whether they
 be Master of them at this day or no. In stead
 of Rivers, which this Country seemeth a little
 to want, there are many large and capacious
 Bayes all along the Coast : the principall
 whereof are, that which the Dutch call *Nassau-*
viu-Bay, sometimes the *Nordt-river*, which
 falleth by it into the Sea at *May-port*. 1. *Hell-*
gate, which is but a Channell of the great
Nordt-river, so called by reason of its difficult
 and dangerous entrance ; though within it a-
 ffords a very safe road for shipping, and fifteen
 or sixteen fathom of water at the mouth.

3. *Zuid-river*,

3. *Zuid-river*, so called because it lieth more Southerly than the rest.

4. But *Virginia* properly so called, is in a better condition. This is an elder Daughter of England, & one of her first Plantations, who having endured diversitie of fortunes, and struggling for a long time at the beginning with ill success, at last by the favour of Divine Providence arrived unto such a competent happiness, as that the Colonie are said to live very comfortably and helpfully among themselves, and to give good hopes of perpetuating, and improving their condition to posterity. The Country hath on the North-east of it *Nieu-Nederlands* afore said, on the South-west *Florida*; the name of *Virginia*, which before was common to the whole Province, being, upon the Plantation of *New-England* and that other, restrained to this part of the Country only, which reacheth from the thirty fourth to the thirty eighth degree of Northern latitude. The Country somewhat inclined to heats, which yet are much moderated by those Constant Easterly windes, which they call *Brisers*, and by some other cooling blasts from the Ocean ever and anon. It is a Country generally well distinguished into Hills and Valleys: the first whereof are well cleaved with Woods, and the

the latter with Fruits. The soile being so good, that 'tis said in many places, an acre of land well husbanded will return two hundred bushels, or twenty five quarter of good grain: rich in veins of Allom, as likewise in Pitch, Turpentine, Oile, plenty of sweet Gummes, and severall sorts of plants for Dyers use: not wanting many good Mines of Iron, Copper, &c. Timber and tall Cedar-trees in infinite abundance; much Cattle: Fish and Fowl of all sorts: no scarcety of *Maiz* among the Natives; on the mountains some Christall is found, and on the Shore Pearls. To be short, excepting those metallis of *Pern* and *Mexico*, (of which I hear not, that any discoveries as yet have been made in these parts) it seems not deficient in any thing, that may encourage or reward an industrious people. The Country not half peopled with Natives; and those that are there found, as much differing one from another in size, as in language and manners. There are some, whom they call *Sasques-Hanoxi* of such a vast bulk and stature, that they seemed, as it were Gyants to the English themselves; others, whom they call *Wigamoci*, so little and low, that in companie with the other they seem'd but so many *Pigmies*: but the generality of them, it must be confessed, are

are taller and well limb'd, though most commonly without beards. Their cloathing is mantles of Deer-skins with something like an apron hanging before them. They paint their bodies and faces all over with figures of Serpents and other horrid creatures, 'as is thought, only that they may seem terrible to their enmies, who are so wise as to fright them again as much with the same. These of *Virginia* are held to be crafty and revengefull, and not a little more industrious and active, than other Natives, especially towards the North. There is no Country in the world, for the bigness, better watered than this part of *Virginia* is, with many pleasant and fair Rivers: the cheife whereof are these, viz. 1. *Pawhatan*, so named from a principall Roycelet of these parts, whose Territories are divided and wonderfully fertilized by this River, which runs a course of an hundred miles, navigable all the way, at least by smaller Vessels, and falls into the Sea with a mouth two or three miles broad. 2. *Nansamund*. 3. *Pamunkey*. 4. *Toppaphanock*, navigable one hundred and thirty miles. 5. *Pamunkey*, of a deeper Channel than any of the rest, and affording variety of choice fish, with divers others.

The English first settled their Plantation upon

upon the South-side of a large and goodly Bay, called by the Natives *Chefe-peack*, which thrusting it self a good way up into the Countrey, and receiving into its bosome many particular Rivers, yeelds a very safe station for ships, and is the only entrance into this part of the Countrey : The Capes or Points whereof are therefore well fortified, particularly *Cape Henry*, *Cape Charls*, &c. The Towns which the English have built, or doe frequent in way of Trade, are chiefly 1. *James-Town*, so named by the first Adventurers, in honour of King *James* : it lyeth on the South-side of the Bay, and was first built in the year 1606, but since fortified with a Trench drawn round about it, and some pieces of Ordinance planted. 2. *Henricopolis*, or *Henries Town*, so named from Prince *Henrie*, then living, built in a very convenient place more within Land, about fourscore miles distant from *James-Town*. 3. *Dales-guise*, so named, because built and planted at the charges of Sir *Thomas Dale*, Deputy Governour of the Countrey, about the year 1610. There is also *Ketoughtan*, a Town of the Natives upon the Bay, where the English are said to frequent and trade much. And lastly *Wicocomoco*, a Town of *Powhatans*, one of the chief Royetelets of

T

the

the Countrey, as hath been said, whom the English, at their first coming thither, courted much, and procured a Crown of Copper, with some other richer presents, to be sent him from King *James*, on purpose to oblige him : which yet they were hardly able to doe. For although he professed likewise on his part very much love and affection to the English, yet partly by his procurement, as 'tis said, and partly through their own overmuch security, not without some provocations given on the part of the English, there were, about the year 1621, not less than three hundred and forty Englishmen murdered by the Savages, unexpectedly falling in upon them, and with such violence and resolution, as that if a certain Native of the Countrey, become Christian, had not discovered the business a very little before to them at *James-Town*, their principall Fort and place of strength had been surprized, and the whole Colony almost at the mercy of the Savages. But it pleased God to prevent their utter destruction by that means : And since that time, I suppose they stand better upon their guard.

5. The *Bermudas* are a multitude of small Islands in the Atlantick or North-Sea, as at the Indies they call it, lying right over against

Virginia,

Virginia; at a distance of four or five hundred miles. They lye from thirty to thirty two degrees of Northern latitude, in form of a Croissant, or half-Moon; being so called from *John Bermudaz* a Spaniard, who first discovered them. But the principall of them, and that which is most properly called *Bermudaz* Island, lyeth at the lowest and most Southerly corner of them, in the latitude of thirty two degrees, and twenty five minutes. They are sometimes called the *Summer Islands*, from *Sir George Summers*; who, in the year 1609. in company of *Sir Thomas Gates*, and about one hundred and fifty persons more, sailing towards *Virginia*, hardly escaped a terrible shipwrack upon these Islands: the ship, which they were forced to run on shore, being lost, but the men and much of her lading, by Gods great mercy, saved by their Boats. They found the place altogether desolate, inhabited neither by Man nor Beast, save only some Swine in the Woods; but of Fowle such infinite plenty, that they would take a thousand of some one sort as big as Pidgeons, in 2 or 3 houres; with these and the Swine they found there, which were very large and fat, for the most part of the time they stayed, and with variety of fish they sustained themselves happily, till they had

built a new Ship and a Bark, sufficient to waite
 them and their Company over to *Virginia*.
 They found likewise diverse sorts of fruits in
 the Islands, very pleasing and good : abundance
 of Mulberry trees and Silk-worms, *Palmetos*,
Cedar-trees, and others ; on the Sea
 coasts some quantity of Pearls, Amber-greece
 and other good Commodities, an Aire gene-
 rally so temperate and agreeable to their con-
 stitution, that they rejoyced not a little in
 their misfortune, which had cast them upon
 a place so likely to be advantagious to them-
 selves and the Nation : as by their earnest pro-
 curement it hath since in part proved : it being
 at this day one of the chiefest Plantations of
 the English : and though as yet they seem to
 trade only in Tobacco, as likewise *Virginia* is
 said to doe ; yet it is not through any defect
 either in the one Countrie or the other, as if
 they afforded no better Commodities, but ra-
 ther through the fault and unskilfulness of the
 Planters, who busie themselves only in those
 ordinary and easie Commodies, and neglect
 the improvement of better, *viz.* that of the
 Silk-worms and of making Silk. The first Co-
 lonie was sent thither in the year 1612, under
 the command of Captain *Rich. Moore* ; which
 prospered so well, that in a few years the whole
 Island

land, (*viz.* the principall one) where they
 be chiefly inhabit, was divided into *Centreds*,
 or Hundreds, as we may call them, and to
 every Hundred a Burrough or chief Town
 assigned, and the Government settled entirely
 according to the Laws of *England*. In the
 year 1623 there were no less than three thou-
 sand reckoned to be there, ten good Forts
 erected, and about fiftie pieces of Ordinance
 mounted upon them : although the place it self
 is so naturally fenced with Rocks and little
 Islands lying about it, that the Inhabitants,
 in that respect only, seem to contemn all dan-
 gers from without : it being almost impossible,
 without particular knowledge of the passages,
 for a Vessel of but eight or ten Tuns to come
 safely into Harbour : and yet with such know-
 ledge there is both easie passage and secure
 station for the tallest ships.

CHAP. V.

Of Florida.

1. Southward of *Virginia*, somewhat
 towards the West, lyeth the large
 and spacious Countrie of *Florida*, enobled hi-

therto rather by the great paine which the Spaniards have taken, and the ill successes which they have met with in the discovery and search of this Province, than by any thing else they have discovered in it answerable to their desires. On the East it hath the Atlantick Ocean, [or *Mare del Nord*. On the South and some part of the West, the Gulf of Mexico; and on the rest of the West, part of *New-Gallicia*, and some other Countries, not yet perfectly known. It was first of all discovered by Sir *Sebastian Cabot* (as hath been said) at the charges of the King of England, about the yeare 1497; but afterwards more thoroughly searched into by *John de Ponce*, a Spaniard, in the year 1512, and by him named *Florida*, because he first landed upon it on Palm-Sunday, which as they say, the Spaniards use to call *Pascha Flores*, or *Pascha Florida*. The Countrey lyeth in the same parallel with *Castile* in Spain, and is supposed to be of a neer temperature with it, both for Aire and Soil: only this of *America* is supposed to be somewhat the more fertil and lusty, as not having as yet been worn out with Tillage and use, as the other hath. They have great plenty of *Maize* in this Countrey, which they both sow and reap in less than four Moneths space; and which is somewhat

somewhat more observable, among People
 otherwise barbarous, it is not counted among
 any mans private possession; but laid up
 in publique Granaries and Barns out of which
 is orderly distributed at all times to parti-
 cular persons and Families, according to their
 necessity. Its well stored likewise with divers
 sorts of Fruits, both proper to the Country,
 and common to other parts; especially with
 a kinde of Plum of a rare colour and taste,
 Mulberry trees, Cherry trees, Chestnuts, Grapes,
 &c. Beasts they have in abundance, both wilde
 and tame, with no less plenty of Fowl. Many
 large Forests and lesser Woods, well repleni-
 shed with good Okes of the largest size, lofty
 Cedars, Cypress, and Bay trees, with extraor-
 dinary plenty of that wood which the Ame-
 ricans call *Pavane*, and the French *Sassafras*,
 the bark whereof is said to be very Medicinal
 in sundry Diseases, especially for the Stone,
 and all obstructions of Urine, Winde-Colick,
 and others; and therefore much used by the
 Apothecaries. They have also another sort of
 wood called *Esquine*, not unknown in other
 parts, affirmed to be of soveraign and presens
 remedie against the *Lues Venerea*; a Maladie
 which the Indians are said to be generally, and
 not seldome very foully subject unto: yea they

say, that the Spaniards from the Indies first brought it into *Italy* and other parts of *Europe*; where formerly it was either not at all or at least not much known. 'Tis likewise thought, that the Country is not altogether without Mines of Gold and Silver, especially about the mountains *Apalatesi*, as they call them, though neglected by the Natives, till the Spaniards came and rifled so strangely for Gold in the other Provinces; which probably might make the Natives of this Province to conceal theirs, when the Spaniards were among them; and still to forbear the searching after it (in case that indeed they have any) only that they may not be troubled with such Ghuefts. But for Emeralds, Turquoises, and other fine Stones, it is certain, the Country hath many, of great worth and beauty: but the plenty of these make them cheap at the Indies, and to be thought not worth the searching after. The People of this Countrey are somewhat of the largest size and stature, in respect of other Americans generally, yet well proportion'd withall, going for the most part naked, only with some skin of a Stag, or other Beast, tyed before them. Their hair black and let to grow; so that in many of them it hangs down as low as their thighs. Cunning they

are

are said to be, and great dissemblers ; stomach-full, and much given to revenge : which is the cause that they are seldome, but in warre, one with another. One thing, they say, there is peculiar to this Country of *Florida*, viz. that it breeds abundance of Hermaphrodites, more than any other part of the world beside : whom they likewise use most hardly, making them carry their burthens and luggage like Beasts, and putting them to all kinde of Drudgery.

2. The Country is generally plain and level, having few or no mountains at all in it, save only the *Apalatesi*, supposed by the Natives to have rich Mines of gold in them, and which the Spaniards saw, but had not time nor other necessarie accommodation to stay and search them ; by reason they were so much wearied and wasted with a long March, before they got thither, and found the People so stout and obstinate thereabouts, that in stead of entertaining them with their Hens and Fowl as other places had done, they were welcom'd with blows, and made to return, leaving not a few of their best Soldiers behinde. Rivers there are many, and those very large and commodious, as namely *Rio Secco*, or the *dry River*, so called by the Spaniards (as some think) because

because they could finde no gold in it. 2. *Rio Grande*, or the great River. 3. *Ligeris*. 4. *Garruna*. 5. *Sequana*, &c. These last, so named by the French, who, after the Spaniards, for some time had, but never held any long possession of the Countrey. There are also *Rio de Flores*, *Rio de Nieves*, *Rio de Spiritu Santo*, lesser streams, yet all of them with the rest, falling at several places into the great Lake of *Mexico*; and some of them, not a little haunted by the *Caymans* or West-Indian Crocodiles, a Creature, as hath been said before, dangerous both at Sea and Land. The Countrey hath not yet been so well discovered, much less conquered or subdued by those who pretend themselves to be Masters of it, as to be distinguished into any certain Provinces. The Natives, who as yet hold possession and command of it for the most part, are themselves generally sorted into certain Tribes or great Families; all which are governed severally by a chief of their own, whom they call *Paracouffi*; and by reason thereof, are almost continually in feud and warre one with another. The Provinces or parts of the Countrey, that I finde any way mentioned by Authors, with any account at all of their situation and bounds, are only these, viz. 1. *Panuco*. 2. *Co-*

las:

lar: And 3. *Tequesta*, or *Florida*, properly so called. The first lyeth on the borders of *New Spain*, beyond the Bay called *de Spirito Santo*. The second neer the Point or Cape called *Cape Florida*. The third being that long *Peninsula* or half Island which pointeth upon the *Ile Cuba*, and stretcheth it self out North and South an hundred leagues or more in length; but is not in breadth above thirty where it is largest, and in many parts much less: well known by the Cape called *Los Martyres*, which looketh (as it were) into the *Ile Cuba*, and the River of the *Holy Ghost*, with three other goodly Bays, which open and empty themselves into that of *New Spain*, or the Gulf of *Mexico*.

3. The Towns and places most known in this Province, are *Saint Helens*, seated on or neer unto a Promontorie of the same name, where this Country bordereth on *Virginia*.
 2. *Fort Charles*, or *Arx Carolina*, built and so named by the French in the reign of *Charles* the ninth their King, but afterwards ruin'd by the Spaniards. 3. *Port-royall*, a well frequented Haven, at the mouth of a river which beareth the same name. More within land there is,
 1. *Apalche*, an old Town of the Natives, formerly a place of great resort; now a poor thing

thing of about some fourty or fifty Cottages: and yet as poor as it is, *Pamphilus Narvaez* a Spaniard; at the time when he searched the Country, found the Natives not willing to part with it. For though he took it from them, it was not without some resistance, and they quickly recovered it again: and at 2. *Amis*, another old Town of theirs, nine dayes march from the other, they overtook him, and fell so resolutely upon him, that he left not a few of his best Souldiers dead upon the place, and was content himself to march quietly away with the rest. 3. *Ochalis*, a Town consisting of about 5 or 600 Sheds and Cottages likewise of the Natives. 4. *Vittacuche* a Burrough of two hundred Houses. There is also on the Eastern shore of this *Peninsula* St. *Matthewes*, a place possessed and well fortified by the Spaniards; and Saint *Augustines* on the same Shore, but lying somewhat more Southerly than the other, at the mouth of a River called likewise Saint *Austins*. This latter was taken and sack'd by Sir *Francis Drake* in the year 1585. who took out of one only Fort, called Saint *Johns*, no less than eighteen pieces of Brass Ordinance, and twenty thousand Florens in ready money, which was intended for the pay of the Garrison.

4- This Country is not much inhabited either by Spaniards or French, though both successively have had it in possession : For *Ponce* a Native of *Leon*, as hath been said, first discovered the *Peninsula* upon Palm-Sunday, 1512. but did no more than only scowre along the Coasts, and give some names to the Promontories, Rivers and places of note which he met with. After him, *Vasquez de Ayllen* with some Ships from *Hispaniola* fell in with the more North-east parts of the Country towards *Virginia*, but did no more than get some few of the Natives, (and that treacherously, as some say, having first invited them on ship-board, to dinner and upon pretence of trafficque with them) with whom he presently returned for *Spain*. If it were so, his practises did not prosper with him ; for a few years after, returning again with a stronger supply of men, and provision to make a further discovery of the Country, one of his Ships was cast away upon the rocks, in the same place viz. before the Cape Saint *Helena*, and two hundred of his men murdered by the Natives before his face upon their landing. Nor had the voyage of *Pamphilus Narvaez* before mentioned, any better success in the year 1528. For venturing too farre up into the Country, viz.

to *Apalcot*, as was said, (which was a full
 moneths march from the place of his first land-
 ing) out of hopes of some great Treasure
 there to be found, though at first he made shift
 to master some of their petty Towns, yet finally
 he lost both himself and most of his men.
 Lastly the expedition of *Hernandes a Soto* in
 the year 1543. though more famous than any
 of these, yet proved as fruitless as the rest.
 He began his March in the year 1538. and
 continued it till 1543. over-running the country
 with a little Armie of three hundred and
 fifty horse and 90 foote, subduing the *Para-*
cassi, or petty Princes, where he came, to the
 Crown of *Spain*, and compelling them to send
 in their Turkeys, Hens and other Fowles, for
 the victualling of his running Camp, every
 day: till at last finding his hopes of gold fru-
 strate, and a good part of his Army wasted,
 and the rest much weakned with travell, struck
 with greife, and (as some say also) with a fea-
 ver he died in the midst of his journey, and the
 remnant of his company, under the command
 of *Ludovico Muscoso* his Lieutenant, with
 much difficulty recovered *Mexico* at last. Up-
 on so many unsuccessfull attempts, the Span-
 ards seem to leave the Country; whereupon
 the French enter, sent thither by *Gaspar Ca-*
lini

ligni Admirall of *France* in the yeare 1562,
 but they were such as the Spaniards liked not
 to have so neer them: wherefore immediatly
 upon the landing of a second supply in the year
 1565 at *Charls Fort* upon the River *Pors-royall*
 above said, the Spaniards set upon them both
 by Sea and Land, force their Ships violently
 upon the rocks, sack the new Town, and put
 the whole Colony to the sword (scarce one
 man escaping) together with *Ribault* him-
 self, who was Commander in chief for the
 expedition. There were above fix hundred
 French slain in this Action, and all their hopes
 in *Florida* thereby utterly extinct. Since that
 time the Spaniards have better fortified those
 places of the *Peninsula*, viz. *Saint. Matthews*
 and *Saint Augustine* above said; together with
 the Castles of *Saint Philip* and *Saint Jago* in
 the more northerly parts of it. But it is like
Esops dog in the manger, rather to keep out
 others, than that they make any good improve-
 ment of the Country themselves: and there-
 fore if they were beaten out, and sent to at-
 tend their Mines and Sugar-mills elsewhere, it
 may seem but just. The Country is a large and
 goodly Province of *America*, of a fertil and
 good soil generally, yet neither peopled with
 Natives, nor used in any sort as it ought, to
 the

the honor of God and the advancement of publick good. What reason or justice therefore can it be, that the Spaniards, only by the advantage of a Fort or two upon the Coast, should pretend to be Lords of the whole land, and neither improve it themselves, as it ought to be improved, nor permit any other Nations, that are willing so to doe? 'Tis supposed indeed, they keep it as a reserve of Treasure to themselves, that when they have leisure, or that their Mines at *Potosi*, or other places fail, they may make a further search about the *Apalates* of this Province; of which there are confident reports that they have Mines; and though success hitherto hath not answered their endeavours much, yet they despaire not in due time to finde them, upon an absolute conquest of the Country and a more thorough search. And truly their policie and great providence seems not easily to be condemned: but in the mean time, if any other Nation upon just grounds shall happen to step between and prevent them, they have but little reason to complain, or to count themselves injured.

5. There lie over against the Country of *Florida* westward, or southwest certain small Islands, which because they are but small ones, and

and lye so neer the Continent, Geographers sometimes describe as a part and appertaining to the Continent. They are called by a general name the *Leucaya* Islands, and have not much to be spoken of them. The cheife are first *Las Tortugas*, or the *Tortoises*, which are seven or eight little Islands lying together at the South-west point of the *Peninsula* called *Cape Florida*, right over against the Port *Havana* of the Isle *Cuba*; from which they are distant about five or six leagues; and by their lying so scattered up and down in the Sea, as they doe, they make the passage from thence to *Havana* not a little dangerous. Secondly *Los Martire*. These are three great rocks, rather than Islands lying to the South-east of *Cape Florida*, and covered for the most part with a whitish sand and a few bushes growing on them. They seem at a distance to beare a resemblance of men impaled, or bound to stakes, as the Martyrs in Primitive times usually were; which occasioned the Spaniards so to name them. 'Tis very dangerous to come too neer them; but to have sight of them is of great use to men at Sea: For by passing these rocks, and leaving them to the South-east, they certainly know, that they are now *entred the Streits*, not of *Magellan*, which lye many thousands of leagues further

ther Southward, (of which we shall speake in due place) but of *Bahama*; that is, that they have left the Ocean, and are fallen in among those many Islands, which doe, as it were *Barricado* and block up the Eastern Coasts of *America* towards *Nombre de Dios* and *Terrafirma*, as they call it; through which the passage to the Continent is sometimes dangerous, by reason of contrary windes; and alwayes such, as it requires the skill and care of an experienced *Pilot* to conduct the Ships well thither. Thirdly, *Bahama*, lying westward of *Cape Florida*, famous for nothing but only for giving name to the *Streits* so called, which run betwixt the *Peninsula* of *Florida* and it, with such a violent course and torrent, that although it be above sixteen miles broad, yet many times neither winde nor Oares can prevail against it. Fourthly, *Guanahani*, the first piece of American-ground that was discovered, and named by *Christopher Columbus* *Saint Savours*, or *Salvador*, as hath been said.

CHAP. VI.

Of California.

1. **C**alifornia in the generall containeth all those Provinces of the Northern part of *America*, whither discovered or undiscovered, which lie westward of *Florida*, *Canada* and *Virginia*, and to the Northwest of *New-Gallicia*, up to the Streits of *Anian*, or that Sea, which is supposed to divide the Continent of *Tartary* from *America*: but more especially taken, it comprehends only that large *Peninsula* or Demy-Island (as it seemeth to be) which stretcheth it self from North to South, to a vast length, on the West side of *Mar Vermiglio*, as 'tis commonly called, and sometimes the Bay of *California*. They that take it in the first and largest sense, describe under the name of *California* these four particular Provinces, viz. 1. *Quivira*, 2. *Cibola*, 3. *California*, properly so called, and 4. *Nova Albion*.

2. *Quivira* takes up the most Northern and unknown part of *America* towards the West, reaching as far as the supposed Strait of *Anian* aforesaid (if there be any such) or else

joyning to the Continent of *Tartary*. It
 likewise the barrenest and least fruitfull part
 of all the *West-Indies*, especially for Cattle
 it hath great store, and pasturage good
 the Countrie being for the most part plain
 level, and nothing else but pasturage: The
 Natives few and Savage; living in Hordes,
 great Companies together, after the manner
 of the *Tartars*: to whom they are Neighbours
 and, as it is not improbably thought, of the
 same race. They cloath themselves (*viz.* the Men)
 most commonly in that kinde of Oxen hide
 which we described before, *chap. 9.* under the
 name of *Taurus Mexicanus*: The Women
 with little else but their hair; notwithstanding
 the Countrie, especially for one halfe of the
 year, is excessively cold. Their Cattel, though
 they be much less than the ordinary kind of
Europe, are the chief sustenance and im-
 ployment of the Natives, by pasturing of huge
 Herds whereof from place to place the Peo-
 ple live, and maintain a Traffique with other
 parts. Yet some of them inhabit Towns; the
 chief whereof, as yet discovered, seem to be
 these, *old Aztec*, or *Aztec*, as some call it,
 a small Town, but seated in a strong defensible
 place, having some small quantity of Cotton
 growing about it. *Tehuacan*, a Town seated

on the banks of a River, bearing the same
 me, and inhabited, it seems, by a stout and
 olute People, and whom the Spanish, coming
 among them in the year 1540, had much ado
 Master. They endured a siege for the space
 six weeks together; and at last finding
 themselves so strongly beset by enemies, that
 there was no means of escape, but by death or
 holding up themselves, rather than they would
 fall alive into their hands, they first buried and
 spoiled all such Treasure as they had (which
 were chiefly Saphirs, and a few other Gemms
 at the Countrey afforded), and after that
 setting fire on their household-stuff, they took
 their Wives and Children with them, and
 made a desperate salley out upon the Spani-
 ards; wherein, although they were most of
 them slain; trod under the horse feet, or
 drown'd in passing the River, yet was it not
 without some loss to the Spaniards themselves;
 nor would those few that were left behind
 deliver up the Town, till it was fired about
 their ears, and that they could no longer abide
 it. 3. *Cicnic*, another small Town four
 dayes journey distant from *Tignex*. The
 countrey about this place, although generally
 be all good pasturage, and maintains aboun-
 dance of Cattel, yet is it so open and plain,

that for almost one hundred miles together the Spaniards in their march hither from *New Spain* found neither stone nor tree, nor anything else that could serve them for a Landmark : so that they were forced, as they marched along, to raise up heaps of the Count's Cow-dung, to serve them for direction in their coming back : which was not long after. For, not finding the Commodities they sought for, and fearing to be surprized by Winter in those cold Countries, where they had no kinde of accommodation, they made some what a hasty retreat : leaving only behind them some few Religious men, of the Order of *St. Francis*, whose desires to doe the People good by converting them to the true knowledge and worship of Almighty God procured them not long after, the Crown's Martyrdom ; being murdered all of them in one, by the Natives, and he not without much difficulty escaping their hands.

3. *Cibola* lyeth more Southward of *Quivira*, betwixt it and *New-Gallicia* to the North and North-East : On the West it hath *Mar Vermiglio*, or the Bay of *California*. The Aire of the Province indifferently temperate, especially if compared to the sharp frosts and colds of *Quivira*. The Countrie, for the

most part level and plain, as *Quivira* is. Few
 trees at all in it, except here and there some
 woods of Cedars : which yet doe abundantly
 supply the Natives both with Timber and
 fuel. The ground affords plenty of *Maiz*,
 and some small white Pease ; of both which
 they usually make bread. There is great store
 of Venison, and a kinde of Sheep (as they say,
 and as it should seem by their Fleece) as big as
 some little Horse or Oxen ; some of their
 horns weighing fourty or fifty pound. But
 perhaps, by some mistake of Authors, this
 Beast may be no other then the *Taurus Mexi-*
cana afore described : whose hair is extreemly
 thick and shaggie, and of which they make
 cloath, as of wooll, as hath been said. There
 are also Lyons, Bears, and Tygres in this Pro-
 vince, in such numbers, that the People of
 the Countrie are not a little troubled with
 them, and would gladly destroy them, if they
 knew how. The People are generally well
 limb'd, tall of stature, and seem to be a little
 more ingenious than their neighbours of *Qui-*
vira : yet they goe naked many of them, only
 covered before with Mantles made of skins :
 which are many times painted, and that with
 such curiosity and Art, as doe sufficiently ar-
 gue, that neither themselves nor their neigh-

bours of *Quivira*, from whom they have their
in traffique, doe make them ; but that they
are the Merchandise and Commodities of
some other Nations ; perhaps of *Cathay* or
China, who, by the North-west Seas, doe trade
with the Maritime parts and People of *Quivira*.

4. This part of the Countrie hath been
reasonably well searched by the Spaniards, but
as yet nothing discovered so considerable as to
perswade them to stay in it. That which seems
most observable, is the great Lake *Tumacacori*,
situate almost in the midst of the Province,
upon which, or neer unto it, they found seven
or eight old Towns of the Natives, some
whereof contained four or five hundred of
their Cottages or little houses, and were forti-
fied also with Ramparts, and other works of
defence ; so as the Spaniards could not become
Masters of them but by force and storming
them : in the attempt whereof *Vasquez Coronado*
himself, their Commander in chief, was
twice beaten down with stones, by the Na-
tives ; yet at last carrying the place, he found
in it good plenty of *Maize* indeed, which was
some refreshment to his Army, but nothing
else : whereupon having named the place *Granada*,
in memory of the Vice-Roy of New

Spain, who sent him upon that expedition, he departed. In his return homeward he fell upon a certain Countrey, which he named *Tucayan*, of which his companie report great matters : as first of a certain River called *Huex*, on the banks whereof, in the space of twenty leagues or thereabouts, there stand no less than fifteen good Burroughs well built, and furnished likewise with stoves or hot-houses, against the cold, as in other Countreies of Europe : as also of a very fruitfull and pleasant Valley, which therefore they called *Araya de Coraxones*, of another great Town and Territorie thereto belonging, called *Chichitica* : and lastly of the Valley of *Nuestra Señora*, or our Ladies dale, in the South parts of the said Territorie ; all of them described for such rich and delicious places, that some take them for the *Campi Elisi* of *America* : especially seeing the Spaniards were never known to visit them the second time ; the discoveries which have been made since, being only of the North-west parts of the Countrey along the coasts of *Mar Vermiglia* ; and this no farther than only to give name to certain Capes or Promontories which they met with, as namely 1. *Porro de St. Clara*, neer to the mouth of the River which they call *Rio del Norte*. 2. *Las Playas*.

Playas. 3. *St. Michael.* 4. *Lago del* which bordereth on *Quivira* : And lastly *El Rey Coronado*, Eastward of that.

5. *California*, specially so called, is by many thought and described to be but a *Peninsula* or half Island, by reason that the Bay which divides it from *Quivira* and *New-Galicia*, towards the North runneth much narrower than it doth Southerly : which made them think, that somewhere or other at the North it was joyned to the main-Land of *America*. But later discoveries have found it to be a perfect Island, and altogether separate from the Continent. For about the year 1620 some Adventurers beating upon those coasts Northward, accidentally, and before they were aware, fell upon a Streight, the waters whereof ran with such a Torrent and violent course, that they brought them into *Mar Vermiglio*, whether they would or no, and before they knew it : and by that means discovered that *California* was an Island, and that the waters which were observed to fall so violently into that Sea, towards the North, were not the waters of any River emptying it self into the Bay from the main-Land, as was formerly thought, but the waters of the North-west Sea it self, violently breaking into the Bay, and dividing

dividing it wholly from the Continent. It lyeth North and South, extending it self in a vast length, full twenty degrees of latitude, viz. from twenty two to forty two; but the breadth nothing answerable. The most Northern point of it is called *Cape Blanche*: that to the South, *Cape St. Lucas*, memorable for that rich and gallant prize which Captain *Esquivado*, in the year 1587, being then in his voyage about the World, took from the Spaniards neer to this place. As for the Island it self, it is not at all inhabited by the Spaniards; whether it be, that they want men to furnish new Plantations, or that they finde no matter of invitation and encouragement from the Countrey; or perhaps that the access thither be not so easie. For 'tis reported to be wonderfully well peopled by the Natives; and that there were found only upon the coasts and along the shore of *Mar Vermiglia* twenty or twenty three Nations, all of different languages. The Countrey abundantly well stored both with Fish and Fowl, as appears partly by the Natives; who take an huge pride in making themselves gay with the bones of the one, with which they load their eares, and sometimes their noses also: and with the feathers of the other, which ordinary People weare

weare only sticking about their waiste; but great persons, and such as will be fine indeed, beset their heads strangely with them, and have comonly one bunch of them bigger than ordinary hanging down behinde them like a taylor: Having no knowledge of the true God, they worship what the Devill will have them, that is, the Sun; attributing to it only, the increase of their Fruits and Plants, healthfull Seasons, and most of the other good they enjoy, or are sensible of. Their government is said to be only Oeconomicall, each Father ordering the affairs of his Familie apart, without subjection to any other superiour; yet so well managed, that they live in good peace one with another; not without many good Laws and Customs, *viz.* That they allow but one wife to one Man, That they punish Adultery with death, That they suffer not Maids to talk or converse with Men, till they be married, That Widdows may not marry, till they have mourned at least one half of a year for their Husbonds deceased, and divers others of like nature: which perhaps if the truth were known, doe more properly belong to the Natives of *Utopia* or *New-Atlantis*, then to these of *Californiæ*.

¶ 6. The places therein, as yet most observed, are only upon the Sea Coasts, *viz.* the Capes

St. Clara

St. Clara and *St. Lucas*; the one at the South-East of the Island, looking towards *New-Gallicia*; the other at the South-west, looking into the Sea and towards *Asia*. 2. *St. Cruce*: This is a large and convenient Haven, not far from *Cape St. Clara*. 3. *Cabo de las Playas*, more within the Bay. 4. *St. Andrews*, another convenient Haven upon an Island of the same name. 5. *St. Thome*, an Island at the mouth of the Gulf, or Bay, of about twenty five leagues in compass, rising Southerly with an high mountainous point, under which is a convenient road for shipping, and twenty five fathoms of water. On the other side of the Island, towards the main Sea, there is first *St. Abad*, a good Haven, and almost surrounded with a pleasant and fruitfull Countrey. 2. *Cape Trinidad*. 3. *Cape de Cedras*. 4. *Puebla de las Canoas*, from the abundance of those little Boats which the Americans generally use, and doe call *Canoes*; whereof perhaps some store is made there. 5. *Cabo de Galera*, and some others.

7. *Nova-Albion* is only the more Northerly part of this Island, reaching from the thirty eighth degree of latitude, up towards the North as far as *Cape Blanco*, first discovered by Sir *Francis Drake*, in his Circumnavigation
of

of the World, in the year 1577, and by him named *Nova-Albion*; in honour of England his own Countrie, which anciently bore the name. They found the Countrie exceedingly well stored with Deer, grazing up and down the Hills by thousands in a company : The Men generally goe naked all over, the Women using only a piece of a mat, or some such thing instead of an Apron. Their houses built only of Turf and Osier ; yet so wrought together, that they served very well to keep out the cold : in the midst of it is their hearth where they make their fire, and lye all round about it together upon several Beds of Bulrushes. What their Towns are, or whither they have any, is not yet discovered. When the English first landed in those parts, under Sir *Francis Drake*, the Natives of the Countrie immediatly presented themselves to the General, bringing him fine presents of Feathers, and some Kalls of Network made of Rushes : and the news of their arrivall being spread up into the Countrie, it was not long before the King himself came and gave them a visit. He was a person of goodly stature, cloathed all over with certain Conie skins of that Countrie, the furre whereof is exceeding smooth and fine, and the only Robe of Nobility there. He had many other

all men attending on him, and one that went before him, bearing somewhat instead of a Mace; at which there hung three Crowns, by so many chains; the Crowns were made of Feathers, the Chains of Bone; both of them very ingeniously wrought. After these followed a great multitude of the common sort of People, but none of them without his present of something or other, even to the very Boys. The King would needs have the Crowns put upon the Generals head, and the Chains about his neck; to which he consented: and by that Ceremonie promised, in the name and behalf of the Queen of *England*, from whom he said he came, to take them into his protection. So after many other civilities given and returned betwixt them, the King at length departed, and Sir *Francis* with his men returned to their ships; having first erected a pillar upon the place; on which he fastned the Arms of *England*, with the Queens name and his own, to remain as a monument of his being there, and of the surrender which was made of that Country to the Queen of *England*.

CHAP. VI.
 Of New-Gallicia, and the Provinces there
 belonging.

I. **N**EW-Gallicia is the most Northernly Countrey of all America, that is inhabited to any purpose by the Spaniards. Here 'tis true, they are scattered up and down in all the parts of it; but it is at a huge distance, and for the most part only where the Mines are. It is bounded on the East and to the South with the Kingdom of Mexico, or New Spain: on the West with the Gulf or Bay of California. Northward, for so much as is yet discovered, with Quivira and Cibola; lying between eighteen and twenty eight degrees Northern latitude; that is, from La Natividad a Port so named by the Spaniards, in the confines of New-Spain, to the most Northern borders of Cinola, a part of this Province containing, as is supposed, not much less than three hundred leagues in length, and in breadth much more; and whereof not a tenth part either used or frequented by the Spaniards. The Aire is generally here very temperate, inclining rather to heat than cold, and subject

now and then to sodain storms of rain and great claps of thunder ; which yet doe not hinder, but that the Countrie is held to be reasonably healthfull, and the people observed to live generally to a good old age. The Soil, by reason of the Climate, would be a little inclining to drought, but that beside the frequent rains which it hath, it is constantly moistned with fresh morning dewt ; which make it for the most part wonderfully fruitfull, almost beyond beleef : yeelding for every bushel of Wheat that is sown threescore ; and of *Maiz* two hundred for one : beside great plenty of Sugar-Canes and Cochineel ; both which, notwithstanding the Spaniards are said to neglect in some sort, imploying themselves wholly about richer Commodities. For the Countrie affords them good store of Mines, viz. of Sylver and Brasse ; but of Gold or Iron, not many as yet have been found : the Rivers plentifully abounding with Fish, and the Woods with Venison and some other wilde Beasts. The Countrie generally more mountainous than plain, frequently shaded with Woods and whole Forrests of the stateliest Pine trees and Oaks of timber that are to be seen. The People are said to be somewhat of a wavering and inconstant disposition, apt to

take offence; and though civilized in some measure, and made Christians by the Spaniards, yet oftentimes upon some light distaste given, they seem willing to return again to their Woods and Barbarism. The reason whereof in part is conceived to be a natural slothfulness and unwillingness unto any kinde of labour in this People; which they labour most of all to avoid, and are so wise, that they never will be brought to it, but upon good wages: but on the contrary, given to sports very much, viz. singing, dancing, and drinking out of measure, in so much as 'tis thought, if it were not for their beloved liquor, they would hardly be persuaded long to take either the care or the pains of Husbandry. They are of stature reasonably tall, dwelling both in Towns and Villages; being distinguished into certain Clans or Tribes; each whereof is governed by one *Chief*, but all of them subject to the Judges and Officers of the King of *Spain*. It contains in it these inferior Provinces, 1. *Cinoloa*. 2. *Conliacan*. 3. *Xalisco*. 4. *Guadalajara*; all of them on the Western shore. 5. *Zacatecas*. 6. *New-Biscay* and 7. *New-Mexico*, more within Land.

2. *Cinoloa* is the most Northern part of *New-Gallicia*, bounded on the West, with some part of the Gulf or Bay of *Californias*.

On

On the East with a long ridge of Mountains, which they call *Tepecsuan* : On the North with *Cibola*; and with *Conliacan* on the South. The Country, beside the general fertility of the whole Province of *New-Gallicia*, yeelds great store of Cotton-wooll, by reason whereof both Men and Women here are better appareld, for the most part, than elsewhere the Americans are. Exceedingly well watered with Rivers, which descend from those mountains *Tepecsuan*, not above thirty or forty leagues distant from the Sea; and which, with the varietie of their streams and Meandrons glidings, doe divide the Country into many and good pastures, which are likewise stored with abundance of Kine, Oxen and other Cattel. The chief towns of the Spaniards are, 1. *St. Philip* and *Jacob*, seated towards the Sea side, on the banks of a fair River, some thirty or forty leagues distant from the town of *Conliacan*. 2. *St. John de Cinoloa*, an ancient Colonie of Spaniards, settled there by *Francisco de Tharra*, in the year 1554, which is all they have in this Countrey; except some few old Forts of the Natives, which they found, after their manner, poorly furnished; but have since repaired them for defense against the Natives of those parts, which as yet remain unreduced.

3. *Conliacan* lyeth Southward of *Cinola*, coasting all along the Bay of *California*, which it hath on the West. On the East it hath *New-Biscay* : and on the South *Xalisco*. The Countrie not defective in any kinde of necessary Provision, more especially aboundeth with Fruits of all sorts : But the Spaniards look only at the Mines ; of which they have some few in this Countrie. The People were generally cloathed with Garments of Cotton-wooll, when the Spaniards came first among them, but yet never a whit the more modest ; being exceedingly given to Venery, and that in a more shameless and beastly manner, than many other Americans were, that goe naked. The Spanish Towns are these, 1. *Hinftula*, seated on the banks of a fair River, distant about a dayes journie from the Sea. 2. *Quinola*. 3. *Quatrabarrios*, an old Town of the Natives, but new named by the Spaniards. 4. *El Leon*, an old burrough. 5. *Conliacan*, the chief town of the Province. 6. *St. Michael*, in the Valley of *Arroba*, two leagues distant from the Sea, in a rich and plentifull Countrie both for Corn and fruit, and built by *Nunnez de Gusman* in the year 1531, after he had burnt the Towns, and destroyed a great part of the Natives, inhabitants of the Countrey.

4. *Xalisco*,

4. *Xalisco*, or *Galesco*, as some call it, is bounded on the North with *Conliacan* : On the South with some parts of *New-Spain* : On the East with the Province of *Guadalajara* ; and on the West with the Gulf or Bay of *California*. The Countrey chiefly fertil in *Maize* and Mines of Silver ; not altogether so apt for herbage and pasture, as some other Countries about it. The People were Cannibals, before the Spaniards came among them, and did eat Mans-flesh ; were much given to quarrelling and contentions among themselves ; but by this time 'tis supposed, are reasonably well re-claimed both from the one and the other. In this Countrey, beside many other goodly streams, is the great and famous River *Bara-ria*, on the banks whereof are seated most of their principall Towns, viz. *Xalisco*, which gives name to the whole Province, and to a large Promontory or Foreland on the Western coasts, which shoots it self out into the Bay of *California*, right over against certain Islands which the Spaniards call *the Three Marias*. This was an ancient Cittie or Town of the Natives ; but sacked and taken from them by *Nunnez de Gusman*, in the year 1530. *Compostella*, now the chief City of the Province, and a Bishops See. 3. *La Purification*,

a small Town on the Sea side towards the confines of *New-Spain*. 4. *St. Sebastian*, in *Chiametla*, so called from the River upon which it is built; having rich Mines of silver round about it; and therefore made a Colony by *Franciscus de Tharra* above mentioned, in the year 1554.

5. *Guadalajara*, is bounded on the West with *Xalisco*; on the South, and South-west with *New-Spain*; on the North with *Zacatecas*. A Countie exceeding pleasant, and rich in all kinde of Commodities, but especially in its Mines of silver: Well watered with the River *Barania*, which runneth through the midst of it, and with divers other streams. Yeelding abundantly, both Wheat, Maize, and some other grain. In a word, there is nothing said of the properties of *New-Gallicia* in generall, either for Soile, Climate, or People, but is peculiarly verified of this Province. The chief Towns whereof are, 1. *Guadalajara*, which gives name to the whole Province about it. It is seated on the banks of the River *Barania*, in a most delectable and sweet Aire, and a rich Soil; by advantage whereof it is become the Metropolis of *New-Gallicia*, honoured with an Episcopall See, which was translated thither from *Compostella*, in the year 1570.

with the Courts of Judicature, and with the Residence of the Kings Treasurers for that Province. 2. *St. Maria de los Lagos*, a town thirty leagues Eastward of *Guadalajara*; being a Frontier place, and built on purpose to secure the Countrie against the *Chichimeca*, which are a barbarous and unreduced People of the North-East parts of this Countrey; who harbouring themselves in Caves under ground in the thickest of huge Woods and Forests, doe oftentimes issue out and make foul spoil in the Countrie where they come; and would doe much more harme, if it were not for this Garrison. 3. *Del Spiritu Santo*, built by the Founder of the other two, viz. *Nunnes de Gusman* aforesaid, in a part of the Countrie which they call *Tepeque*.

6. The *Zacateras*, as they call them, are bounded on the South with *Guadalajara*: on the North with *New-Biscay*: on the West with *Conliacan*, and some part of *Xalisco*: and on the East with *New-Span*. The Countrie, especially the more Western part of it, very rich in silver Mines, no Province of this part of *America* richer; but not so apt either for Wheat or *Maiz*. 'Tis a Countrie that would please some rich Miser well, that could live only with the sight of his money: But the

Eastern parts of it abundantly stored with all sorts of Fruits; the Woods every where replenished with Deer; the Fields no less with Corn, and every tree almost giving entertainment to some Bird or other. The towns are,

1. *Las Zacatecas*, forty leagues distant from *Guadalajara*, and four-score from *Mexico*, but neighboured with most rich Mines; and therefore both Garrison'd and also well peopled by the Spaniards: 'Tis supposed there are no less then five hundred Families of them in the Town and about the Mines.
2. *St. Martins*, twenty seven leagues distant from *Zacatecas*, and as rich a place; having a Colony of four hundred Spaniards at least.
3. *St. Lucas de Avila*.
4. *Erena*, lesser towns, but both of them rich and seated in the midst of excellent Mines.
6. *Nombre de Dios*, in the most Northerly part of all this Countrey, sixty eight leagues distant from *Guadalajara*, and founded by the aforesaid *Francisco de Tharra*; who having subdued and quieted the Natives, and thereby gained to himself the Government of these Countries, granted the propriety of some silver Mines both to the Spaniards and Natives; and by that means drew so many of them thither, that in a short time it became the chiefest and best Peopled town of the whole Province.

with
where
with
tain-
are
from
vices
and
peo-
here
them
lar-
aca-
y of
ucas
th
cel-
ost
ght
ded
ha-
nd
of
me
la-
of
he
le
e.

province. 7. *Durango*, in the Valley of *Gua-*
ana, eight leagues distant from *Nombre de*
Dios. 8. *Xeres de Frontera*, a place built on
purpose for the repressing of the *Chichimeca*
foresaid, and other Savages that infested the
borders of *Guadalaajara*, in the regencie of the
Marquis of *Villa Manrique*. And lastly
St. *Lewis*, built by *Alonso Pacheco*, in that
part of the Countrie which is called *Uxi-*
tipa, and Peopled by him with a Colonie
of Spaniards; being distant about twen-
ty leagues from *Panuco* in *New-Spain*, to
which the whole Countrie of *Uxitipa* once
belonged.

7. *New Biscay* hath on the South the *Za-*
catecas; on the West the Countrie of *Cinoloa*.
Northward it is bounded with *New-Mexico*;
the Eastern borders of it looking towards *Flo-*
rida, not yet well discovered; so called by the
Spaniards only from its neighbourhood to
New-Gallicia. It is, as the other Provinces,
exceedingly rich in silver Mines, and hath some
also of lead: which serve principally, as some
say, for the refining or purging of the other
Metal. The people generally of a stout and re-
solute disposition, and with much difficulty
submitting to the yoke: yea the Spaniards
themselves confess, there remain yet to this
day

day four great Towns unreduced, though they lye, as it were, in the middle way, betwixt the *Zacatecas* afore said, and the Mines and Town of *St. Barbara* of this Province. The Spaniards call them *Las quatro Coinegas*, or the four Quagmires, as lying perhaps in the Marshes or in some fenny and lower parts of the Countrey. The towns which themselves hold are

1. *St. Barbara*, famous for the rich Mines about it.
2. *St. Johns*, equall to the other and not above three or four leagues distant from it.
3. *Ende*, the most Northerly town which the Spaniards have in this Countrey, distant about twenty leagues from the other. These be all Colonies of the Spaniards, and built on purpose for securing the Mines.

Fig 7. *New-Mexico* (as 'tis called for distinction sake) is bounded on the South-west with *New-Biscay*; more directly Westward with some parts of *Quivira*: the Countries Northward of it, not yet discovered: Eastward it extends it self as far as *Florida*. This is, without comparison, the largest Province of all *New-Gallicia*, having been searched and discovered by the Spaniards above one hundred, some say above two hundred leagues directly Eastward and to the North-East: and they report wonders

of it, if we may beleieve them, at least
 respect of what was generally found in
 these Northern parts of *America* at their
 first discovery; as namely, that they have Towns
 airy and well built of Lime and Stone, hou-
 ses of four stories high, and most of them pro-
 vided with stoves for the winter season, as well
 as any in *Europe* : The streets fair and broad,
 and the People as curious and expert in divers
 Arts and Manufactures, as any of theirs. More
 particularly they tell us of a town called *Chia*,
 of the Province of *Cuames*, so big, that it is
 said to contain eight several Market-places.
 Another called *Acoma*, a great Town, but
 seated on the top of an high Rock, without
 any ordinary way of access to it, but by a pair
 of staires, hewn out of the hard stone; or else by
 certain ladders which the Inhabitants let down
 and take up as they please. And likewise of a
 third, which they call *Comibas*, containing, as
 they say, no less than seven leagues in length, &
 about half as much in breadth, seated upon a
 Lake, but scatteringly built, and much of the
 space taken up with mountains and many fair
 Gardens, in the midst of which the Town
 standeth. This is certain, that the Countrey,
 to which they give the general name of *New-
 Mexico*, is of a vast extent, reaching from the
 Mines

Mines of *St. Barbara* in *New-Biscay* Eastward and to the North-East above two hundred leagues already discovered, but doubtless taking up no small part of those Countries which are sometimes assigned to *Florida*, is not of the confines of *Virginia* also. The first discoverer of this Country was one *Augustine Royaz*, a Franciscan Frier, about the year 1580, by whose report and encouragement *Antoine de Espeio*, a Native of *Corduba*, but then dwelling at *Mexico*, raised, at his own charges, a Band of an 150 Horsemen, and with a competent number of Slaves, Beasts of carriage, and other necessaries, undertook the business, and discovered many Nations, as the *Conchi*, *Tobosi*, *Passaguates*, *Tepoames*, *Quirri*, and divers others; still marching on till he arrived at a great River, which he named *Rio del Norte*. Here he made some stay and caused the Country on each side of the River to be called *Nova-Mexicana*, and a City to be built, which he likewise named *New-Mexico*. It is seated in the 37 degree of Northern latitude, and distant from *Old-Mexico* four hundred leagues. The name whereof is since changed into that of *St. Foy*; but the dignity of the place improved: being at present the Metropolis of that Province, a Bishops See, the

ordinary Residence of the Governour, and
 with a Garrison of about two hundred and
 fifty Souldiers in it, which both commands the
 Countrie and secures their Mines; of which
 they have some in the towns hereabouts : the
 chief of which towns are, 1. *S. Antonio de Sen-*
ta, the first Town which they have upon the
Yorck River. 2. *Socorro*, so named by the
 Spaniards from the releefe which they found
 were both for themselves and Horses, being
 almost starved with a long march. 3. *Pilabo*.
Sivileta ; all of them old towns, but new
 named by the Spaniards. 5. *Sr. Johns*,
 built some yeers after the first discovery
 of the Countrie by *John D' Ognate*, a Spa-
 niard, who in the year 1599, or there-
 abouts over-ran the Countrie a second
 time with a greater Army, yet pursuing the
 craft of *d' Espeio*, by which means, having ga-
 thered together an infinite mass of treasure, he
 found no better way to secure it, than by build-
 ing this town.

CHAP. VIII.

Of New-Spain, and its Provinces.

1. **T**He Kingdom of *Mexico*, or *New Spain*, was formerly, that is, before the Spaniards conquer'd and dismember'd it, much larger than now it is ; for as much as it comprehended the whole Province of *New-Gallicia*, and reached from the further point of the *Peninsula* of *Yucatan* Southward as far as *New-Biscay* and the confines of *California* Northward : containing in length seven hundred leagues or more, and about half as much in breadth. But since the conquest by *Hernando Cortez* and his followers the whole Countrey of *New-Gallicia* is taken from it, and made a distinct Government, or *Audiencia*, as the Spaniards call it, of itself. The Natives of the Countrey are of the name of the *Chichimeca*, a savage and wilde sort of People of the Province of *New-Gallicia*, especially in the parts of *New-Biscay*, living in Forests and in deep caves under ground whose posterity doe still at this day much trouble and annoy the Countrey thereabouts ; notwithstanding all the endeavours of the Spaniards

ds, and the Garrisons which they keep in those parts on purpose to destroy them. About five hundred years agoe or more, according to the account of the Mexican Annals, divers Bands or Swarms of these *Chichimeca*, weary, it seems, of their Woods and subterraneous dwellings, issued out into the more open Air, and fell down in huge multitudes into these Southerly parts of *America*, which are now called *Mexico* and *New-Spain*: not all at once, but at several times, and under severall names, viz. of the *Suchimilci*, *Chalca*, *Teneca*, *Tlascaltteca*, and others; who subduing or driving out the People they found in those parts, seated themselves in their room: and though at first every Nation or Company of them, as they came, seized upon some Province apart by themselves, and held it, as it were, in Sovereignty to themselves, without acknowledgement of any dependance or subjection to their Neighbours, or those that were there before them; yet in tract of time, and by fortune of the Wars, which they made one upon another, they all fell under the Government of one King, viz. the King of *Mexico*: which was the chief City of the Province. This Kingdome, at the time that the Spaniards first discovered the Countie, was governed by

by a Prince, named *Moteczuma*; one, who by his valour and good success in the warres, in a few years of his reign, before the Spaniards came thither, subdued the better part of a hundred Cities and great Towns to his Dominion; and held in actual submission to his Government, and tributary to him, no less than thirty several *Casiques* or petty Princes, every one of which pay'd him Tribute, and were able upon occasion to bring into the field an hundred thousand men. He is said to have been, for his person, a wise and good Prince, just, affable, and tender of his Subjects goods; but by reason of some heavy exactions, which by his own power and the practise of his Apostles before him, gave him the confidence to impose upon the conquered People, a great part of his Subjects lived but unwillingly under his obedience, and rather by constraint than otherwise: being also further exasperated against him by one barbarous custome, which the Mexicans frequently used, viz. the Sacrificing of men. Their manner was, whensoever they had any solemn occasion of doing honour to their Devil-god *Vitzilopuchili*, as they called him, to send out an Army of men from *Mexico*, into some of the subdued Provinces (in case they had no enemies neerer hand

and to fetch in as many men as they thought good, to be sacrificed; whose flesh likewise afterwards they did eat in a solemn Banquet. This being a business of their Satanicall Religion, and *Motexuma* a Prince extremely superstitious and devoted to the service of his gods, it is said, that he sacrificed commonly, one year with another, twenty thousand men, and some yeers, upon extraordinary occasions, not less than fifty thousand: So great and grievous a Tyranny, by the just judgement and permission of Almighty God, for their great and unnatural sins, did the Enemy of Mankind exercise upon them. He was likewise much given to Women; but it was only to such as were counted his Wives; of which he is said to have had no less than one hundred and fifty with child by him at one time.

1. *Cortez*, that fortunate Spaniard, who first conquered this rich and mighty Kingdom, soon discovered the discontents and ill affections which a great part of *Motexumas* People bore towards his Government; and resolved to make his advantage of it. Wherefore, being already landed in the Island *Aucamil*, or *Coxamul*, as 'tis often called, and having gained his first battel at *Potoneban*, and after that another at *Cintla*, where, with

a handfull of men (not above five hundred in all) some horse, and a few pieces of Ordnance, he defeated an Army of fourty thousand Indians, he quickly obliged those of *Zempoalan* and *Tlascalla* to take part with him against *Moteczuma*; and by their means divers others: as likewise they did, assisting him both in his first march towards *Mexico* with a competent number of Men, and at the siege and taking of it, with an Army of an hundred thousand: In recompense whereof, they enjoy at this day many great Immunities and privileges above the rest of the *Americans*, and in a manner equall to those of the Spaniards themselves. *Moteczuma* was so frighted with the success of *Cortez*, and with the revolt of so many of his own Subjects from him, especially upon his gaining a third battel, and sacking of the rich town of *Chololla*, that at the first he freely admitted him into *Mexico*, and soon after without much contestation, acknowledged himself Vassal to the Emperor and King of *Spain*; presenting him in the nature of a Tribute, as much gold as amounted to one hundred and sixty thousand Castlins or pieces of *Castile*; which are said to be nine shillings and seven pence a peece of common money. Notwithstanding, not long after, upon some differences

differences growing betwixt the Spaniards and People of *Mexico*, and that a Governor of *Motexuma* in the Country, named *Qualpopoca*, had put some Spaniards to death, *Motexuma* was confined to *Correa* his house, and for the more security of his person, a pair of Girdles or Fetters put upon his legs; although he utterly disclaimed the fact of *Qualpopoca*, and caused him with his Son and some others that were complices in the business, to be publicly burnt for it in the Market place of *Mexico*, and that by the sentence of *Correa* himself. The Mexicans, provoked with the injurie and indignity offered to their King, in the midst of his Royal Citie, and in the sight of his People, begin to mutiny and take Arms for the rescue of their Prince. They besiege the Spaniards in their house, together with *Motexuma*, and press so hard upon them, that the Fetters are taken off, and *Motexuma's* help used for the allaying of the tumult, and quieting the People: and although they keep him still under guard, yet they permit him to command and dispatch all affairs, as freely as if he were at liberty; to be attended by his Noblemen and other Servants, in the full State and dignity of a King; only he went not abroad but some guard of Spaniards were with him.

3. About this time there were certain ships come to *Vera Cruz*, which was a new Port town of this Countie that the Spaniards had built since their coming thither, and had landed neer upon a thousand men; which was an accident that had like to have spoiled the design of *Cortez* and all his Company at *Mexico*: these men being sent by *James Velasquez*, Governour of *Cuba*, expressly against *Cortez* and his men, upon pretence that they acted not conformably to the Commission which they had received from him; and gave him no account of their proceedings: which in a great part was true. For it must be confessed, *Cortez* and his men finding themselves to have fallen upon an adventure that was certainly rich and good; and having got such footing and interest in the Countie already, by their success and victories, and chiefly by their confederacy with so many of the Natives and People of the Countie revolted to them, did almost at first, by a general consent, renounce their Commission and dependency upon *Velasquez*, and professed to act immediately from and for the King of *Spain*. What pretences they had for such a resolution, seemingly at least irregular, is not so well known. What ever they were, they proceed in it, and the whole

whole company; (excepting only some few who yet went along with the rest) choose *Cortez* anew for their Commander in chief, and appoint likewise, by common consent, all other Officers of Justice, both Civil and Military, among themselves: and to give the better colour at Court to their proceedings, they send *Portocorrero* and *Monteio*, two of their principalls, into *Spain*, with a rich and huge present, to the Emperour, both to make report of the State of the Country, and to procure immediate Commission from his Majesty, to proceed: after which they advance towards *Mexico*, as hath been said. *Velasquez*, at *Cuba*, understanding their proceedings, labored to intercept both their Messengers and Present, but could not: and therefore sent *Pamphilo Narvaez* with eleven ships, and about nine hundred or a thousand men, to apprehend *Cortez* and oppose his proceedings. This hapned about the time that the differences were but newly calmed betwixt the Spaniards and the People of *Mexico*; and though it obliged *Cortez* to leave the City in a wavering and unsettled condition, yet he took such order, that *Motexuma* still remained under the guard of the Spaniards, as before, assisted with some thousands of their friends of *Tlascalla*;

and he himself taking the rest and some few Spaniards along with him, with undaunted courage and resolution, marched against *Narvaez*. And such was his good fortune, that not only *Narvaez* became his prisoner, without much bloodshed, but likewise all his Men joyned with him in his designe, through the favour of the Chancery, or supreme Court of *St. Domingo*, and by the procurement of the Licentiate *Vasquez de Ayllon*, a Judge of it, who was sent with *Narvaez* to accommodate the differences.

4. With this recruit *Cortez* marches back again to *Mexico*; but at his coming findes things in a very bad condition. For the Mexicans were now in an absolute Rebellion, and made open warre against the Spaniards; had block'd up those in the Citie, together with their friends the *Tlascaltecan*s, and either stopped up or possessed themselves of all the *Avenues* by land or water: so that it was some time before *Cortez* could get in with his forces. But at last by advantage of the night, in which the Mexicans never use to fight, nor yet to keep any very good guard, he found a passage, and made shift to bring in his forces to the great rejoycing and encouragement of his men within, who were very hard put to it

by the numerous Mexicans, and pressed to
 yeeld themselves, and deliver up *Moteczuma*.
 But upon his coming they took heart again;
 and he with his fresh Companies sallying out
 upon the Citizens, easily set them at further
 distance. But yet their numbers were such, and
 so infinitely surpassing his, being called in from
 all parts of the Kingdome not revolted, and
 their resolution such to destroy or starve the
 Spaniards, as they would neither admit, nor
 so much as hear of any terms of Accommoda-
 tion; which *Cortez* profered them divers
 times: their general cry being nothing else,
 but *Get you hence, deliver up the King; and*
calling them Enemies, Thieves, Robbers, and
what not? and truly the condition of the Spa-
 niards was such, and the Mexicans had them
 so much in their power, if not to kill, yet at
 least to starve them, by reason of their infinite
 numbers, which dayly increased, and by being
 so much Masters of the City both by land and
 water, and having broken down all, or most
 of the bridges, by which only there was passage
 out of it, that the Spaniards would gladly have
 been gone, if they durst: but they knew, their
 but offering to leave the City would be their
 destruction. *Mexico* is built, like *Venice*, upon
 the water, in the midst of an huge Lake, having

three only waies to enter it by land, which are upon three several Causeys, of a league, two leagues, and half a league long; and of but little breadth: on all other parts it is surrounded by the Lake, which by sundry and large Channels enters and waters the Citie in all the quarters of it; where they have draw-bridges to pull up and let down at pleasure. At these passes the Spaniards knew very well they should be over-power'd by their enemies; who by this time were grown so resolute and hardy, that they seem'd not to fear or regard death, but in fight would run desperately in multitudes even upon the mouths of the Ordnance: and doubtless but for the Horse-men, which stav'd them off, they would in a short time have rendred them in a manner useless, and have choak'd them up (as it were) with their own dead bodies. In this hurly-burly and distress the Spaniards, whither by force or otherwise, procured *Moteczuma* (who was yet in their power) to appear above upon a Gallerie, or flat of roof the house, upon a pretence, that he should offer som terms of accomodation from the Spaniards, and to shew himself to be well: But it was in a place where the stones and arrows flew so thick from the enraged multitude below, that *Moteczuma* himself received a wound,

round, by one of them; in his head, so unhappily, that within a few dayes after he dyed of : as they say, who would not have the Spaniards thought to have murder'd him ; as the Mexicans say they did, with divers other Noble-men, and some of his Children, the very night they fled. However it were, not long after his death, out of extream necessity, and chiefly for want of Victuals, the Spaniards were forced to leave the City in the night time, and with the loss of four hundred and fifty of their men, who were slain or taken prisoners at the passing of a draw-Bridge ; the rest making a heavy retreat to their friends at *Tlafcalla*. There is standing at this day in *Mexico*, upon the place where so many of them were killed, a certain Hermitage, which they call *as Martyres*, or the Hermitage of the Martyrs; but *very improperly*, saith mine Author, their own Countryman : for what reason I will not here enquire.

5. This retreat of the Spaniards out of *Mexico* happened to be upon the tenth of *June* after mid-night in the year 1520, which the Spaniards at *Mexico* call *the dolefull night*. Nevertheless the undaunted *Cortex*, being got, though with huge difficulty and trouble, by reason of the pursuit of the *Mexicans* for a good

good part of the way, to his sure friends *Tlascalla*, neither lost his courage, nor gave over his resolution of yet gaining *Mexico*, especially the way being now laid open, a sufficient occasion given, by the death of *Montezuma*, and the provocations of the *Mexicans* themselves, to make himself absolute and sole Lord of the place. Wherefore having first for, and procured a competent supply of fresh Souldiers from *St. Domingo*, or *Hispania*, *Almeria*, *Cuba*, and other places, being in nine hundred Foot, eight hundred Horse, and seventeen pieces of Ordinance, he joyns himself with the Auxiliary Forces of *Tlascalla*, which were no less than an hundred thousand men, armed with Bows and Arrows : and with this Army marches again towards *Mexico*, and besieges it both by Land and Water, viz. with the help of thirteen *Vergantines*, Gallies, which he had built upon the Lake, and six thousand *Canoas*, or little Boats, which his friends and confederates had procured him. By which means, and by his Army on Land, in a short time he cut off all Provision from the Citie, and after a siege of full three moneths or more, and a most stout and obstinate resistance made by the People within, which they are said to have lost above a hundred

ed thousand men, beside those which perished
 by famine, sickness, or otherwise, he took
 by force upon Tuesday the thirteenth of Jan-
 uary 1521, sackt it first, and then burnt it to
 the ground : yet afterwards he caused it to be
 built again, far more beautifully than at first
 was ; as in due place we shall further see.
 They speak not of above fifty Spaniards slain
 during the whole siege, six horses, and not ma-
 ny *Tlascalcans*. In this manner, and with
 little charges to the Conqueror, there fell
 to the Crown of Spain the richest and goodliest
 Kingdome (one of them) of the whole World,
 viz. the Kingdome of *Mexico*, which the Con-
 queror presently named *New Spain* ; and in
 reference to which name, the Catholike King
 hath ever since stiled himself in the plural
Hispaniarum Rex, or King of both *Spains* :
 and all by the valour, prudence, admirable re-
 solution, and happy conduct of *Cortez* ; who
 was at first but a private Adventurer in the
 American Plantations and discoveries, though
 otherwise a Gentleman of a good Familie in
 Spain, born at *Medellin* in the Countie of
Castilla la Vieja. The Emperor *Charles* the fifth,
 who was then also King of Spain, for his great
 services endowed him deservedly with many
 great and rich Territories in the Provinces of
Tlascalla,

Tlascalla, *Mechacacan*, and other parts thereof, made him Marquis of the Valley, and of *Guanaxata*, (which is his chief Title) a rich and flourishing Province of that Countrey, Captain General, or Commander in chief, of all the Military forces of *New-Spain*, and General Discoverer of all the Maritime parts and Coasts of *America* towards the South-Sea, affigning him in propriety the twelfth part of whatsoever should be discovered, to him and his Heirs forever : But denied him the Government of *Mexico* out of reason of State, though 'tis said, he much desired it.

6. The bounds of this Kingdome at present sent are thus. On the East it hath a large Arm of the Sea, which they call the Bay of *New-Spain*, or the Gulf of *Mexico* : On the West it hath some parts of *New-Gallicia* and *Mare del Zur* : On the North the rest of *New-Gallicia*, and part of *Florida* : and on the South *Mare del Zur* again, and part of *Guanaxata*. It extendeth it self in length from the furthest point of *Jucatan* South-East, to the borders of *New-Gallicia* Northward, above one thousand Italian miles ; and in breadth from *Panuco* to the South-Sea, about half so much. It lyeth wholly under the Torrid Zone, nor is it a Countrey generally so mountainous

high seated, as some others of *America* are;
 for the most part level or low; yet is it so
 cooled, for three parts at least of four, by the
 cooling blasts off the Sea, and the heats other-
 wise so moderated with frequent rains, which
 hath constantly three moneths in the year,
 June, July, and August, that the Aire is
 thereby exceeding temperate and
 agreeable, and the Climate not unhealthfull,
 especially to temperate bodies, and such as be
 ever so little used to it. A goodly Country
 of inexhaustible wealth and riches; whe-
 ther we regard the Mines of Gold, Silver,
 Iron, &c. of all which it hath many, and
 very good; or the Fruits of the Earth, aboun-
 dance of Cattel, plenty of Corn and Grain,
 any other Commodities and endowments
 of Nature, which serve for the enriching of
 the World. Among other things it affords
 a good store of *Cassia*; the fruit whereof is a
 thing well known and much commended by
 the Apothecaries for its use in Physick, especi-
 ally for Purgations, and removing of all ob-
 structions of phlegm, cholar, &c. Such store
 of Balm, Amber, all sorts of Gumms and pre-
 cious Liquors, as no Country in the World is
 better furnished with matter of excellent
 trifumes and Physick, than the Kingdom
 of

of *New Spain* is; abundance of *Cocaine* and such plenty of that excellent Dye, called *Cocaine*, that 'tis said, no less than five six thousand *Arrobes* of Spanish wool (which make above five times so many English Bushels) are yearly transported thence. Great plenty likewise both of Wheat and Maize with Barley and Pulse of all sorts: All kinds of garden Herbs, Roots and Plants in so great abundance, and so admirably thriving that 'tis scarcely to be beleaved. Whole Woods and Forests, as it were, of Oranges, Limons, Citrons and other such fruit, as hath been found. Some Cherries; but of Apples, Peaches, Figs, &c. beyond measure. The Natives of the Country very ingenious in divers Mechanical Arts, especially in making of strange Figures; a piece of curiosity, wherein they are held to be incomparably, or rather infinitely excellent; and so industrious at it, that although the Americans generally be not People over much addicted to any kind of labour or study, yet at this they will sit a whole day together, without either meat or drink, only out of a natural affection they have to the work, and a desire to be excellent in it. The Country indeed affords them great variety of Birds, and other Fowl, of most rare and exquisite

quisite colours; which is a great advantage
 their skill, and helps much to the accom-
 plishment of their work. They paint likewise
 very curiously upon their Cottons; and are
 held to be generally the best Gold-smiths in
 the world; of most perfect skill in the purging
 and refining of all sorts of Metals, but especi-
 ally of Gold and Silver. And yet in other
 things so strangely stupid and ignorant, that
 when the Spaniards first appeared among them
 on Horse-back, 'tis reported, not a few of
 them took the Horse and Man both for one
 creature; and when the Horse neighed, they
 would enquire very seriously; what he said.
 There be likewise many fair Lakes in the Pro-
 vince of *New-Spain*; but the principall are
 those of *Chapala* and *Mexico*: the former of
 which is in the more Northern parts of the
 Kingdom, towards the borders of *New-Gal-*
icia, and is chiefly famous for the abundance
 of good Salt that is yearly made and transport-
 thence. The other of *Mexico* is the largest
 and goodliest (one of them) in the World,
 of circular form, and containing, as some say,
 little less than nine hundred miles in compass,
 environed with the main Land, the *Peninsula*
 of *Cape of Florida*, *Yucatan*, and the Island
 of *Yuba*; having two only passages in and out,
 and

and both of them well fortified : the one betwixt the point of *Iucatan*, and the Isle *Cuba* where the tide violently enters ; and the other betwixt the said Island and the Cape *Florida* where it goeth as violently out : upon which Gulf the King of *Spain* hath alwaies some good ships in readines for all occasions ; and by them 'tis supposed, he doth more assure his Estates in those parts of *America*, than by his Garrisons beside.

The whole Kingdome of *New-Spain* is divided into these inferior Provinces,

1. *Panuco*. 2. *Mexicana*. 3. *Mechacacan*.
4. *Tlascalla*. 5. *Guaxata*. 6. *Chiapa*.
7. *Iucatan*.

7. *Panuco* is the most Northerly Province of *New-Spain*, by some called *Guastaca*, bounded on the East with the Gulf of *Mexico* : on the West with *Uxitipa*, a Country of *New-Gallicia* : on the North with some undiscovered Countries of *Florida*, from which it is divided by the River of Palms ; on the South with *Mechacacan* and *Mexicana*. It is called *Panuco* from a River of that name ; which running from the mountains *Tepecuan* in *New-Gallicia*, and, dividing *New-Biscay* from the Province of *Zacatecas*, passeth through the midst of this Country also, and at last empties

eth it self into the Gulf. The Country is reckoned to be about fifty leagues in length, and not much less in breadth; of a fruitfull Soile; having some Mines of gold in it, and once very Populous, till *Hernando Cortez* and the Spaniards, about the year 1522, dispeopled it by their cruelty. The chief towns now remaining and inhabited by the Spaniards are, first *St. Lewis de Tampice*, a Colony of Spaniards situate on the Northern bank of the River *Panuco*, at the very mouth of it; where hath a very large Haven, but so barred with sands, that no ship of any great burden can enter or abide in it with safety; and yet the River otherwise so deep, that Vessels of five hundred tun, might sail up threescore leagues at least within land, and thereby visit the rich Mines of *Zatatecas* on the one side of it, and of *New Biscay* on the other, at pleasure, and without fear of much opposition. 2. *St. Sebastian del Puerto* on the South side of the same River, eight leagues distant from the Sea or Gulf of *Mexico*; at present the Metropolis or chief town of the Province, built by *Cortez*, in the place where stood old *Panuco*, which was likewise the Metropolis or head town of the Natives, before the Spaniards burnt and destroyed it. 3. *St. Jago de los Valles*. This is

a Frontier place, and enjoyeth certain special Immunities and some fair possessions also for the defense of the Country against the Savages. It is twenty five leagues distant from *Sr. Juan del Puerto*, lying in an open or Champaign Country, and is fenced about with a wall of Earth.

8. *Mexhuacan* hath on the North East *Panuco*; on the East *Mexicana*, properly so called, on the South part of *Tlascalla*; on the West the main Ocean, or *Mare del Zur*; and last of all more directly Northward *Xalisco* which is a Province of *New Galicia*. The name signifieth in the American language, much as a *Fish Country*; & so it is, having many fair Lakes and Rivers in it abundantly well stored with good Fish. The Country so exceedingly pleasant and healthfull, that 'tis usual for sick persons of other Provinces to come hither to recover their health, only by the benefit of a good Aire. The Soil so abundant and fertile of all sorts of grain, that of four measures of seed, it hath been often observed, they have reaped the next harvest more than so many hundred measures of the same grain. Very well wooded; and by reason of its many Rivers and fresh Springs equally rich in good pasture: and beside great plenty of Medicines.

Heard

Herbs and Plants. It affordeth good store of Amber nigh the Sea Coasts, Mulberry-trees, & consequently Silks; much Honey, wax and divers other Commodities, both for necessity and pleasure. The People of the Country are generally tall, of a strong active body, and a good wit, especially in comparison of other Natives: not unskillfull in divers curious Manufactures; and the most excellent Feather-Pictures, afore mentioned, are said to be found in this Province. They seem more generally inclined to the humors and customes of the Spaniards, than many other Americans; and received the preaching of Christian Religion, when time was, with much willingness: so that the Country is now entirely Christian, and divided into several Parishes. There are said to be in it one hundred and fifty Towns or Burroughs (beside many scattered Villages) most of which have Free Schools erected in them, for the training up of youth in Christian Religion, good literature and Arts; and few of them without an Hospitall for the sick, of which towns the principall are such as follow, viz. *Zinzontza*, the seat of the ancient Kings of *Mechoacan*. 2. *Paseua*, a City fourty seven leagues distant from *Mexico*, once a Bishops See, but now removed to *Valladolid*.

3. *Valladolid*, the Metropolis or chief City of the Province, since the Episcopall chair was removed from *Pascuar* thither. It lyeth upon a great Lake, equall almost for bigness to that of *Mexico*, and is about seven leagues distant from *Pascuar*, towards the East. 4. *St. Michaels*, a good town, forty leagues Westward of *Mexico*, and in the way to the *Zacatecos*, but lying in a road that is somewhat dangerous, being not a little infested with Savages on both sides of it. 5. *St. Philips*. 6. *La Concepcion de Salaya*, 17 leagues distant from *Valladolid*, and a convenient stage for Travelers; being indeed, with the two last mentioned, built chiefly for the defence and securing of the Country against the Savages. 7. *Guaranato*, a Town on the borders of *Panuco*, where there are very rich Mines of silver. 8. *Leon*, another Town likewise of very rich Mines twenty four leagues distant from *Valladolid* and threescore from *Mexico*. 9. *Zamora*. 10. *Villa de las Lagas*, and others. Towards the Sea there is, 1. *Acatlan*, but two miles distant from the Coast, and a small town; yet by reason of a safe and very good Harbour which it hath for shipping, a place of no little trading. 2. *Natividad*, another well known and convenient Haven upon *Mars del Zaco* pertaining

pertaining to this Province, and from whence they usually set sail for the *Philippine* Islands.

3. *St. Jago de buena Esperanza*, so called by the Spaniards, perhaps from the abundance of good Pearls they found upon this Coast. 4. *Colyma*. 5. *Zacatula*, and some others.

This Province, as we said, was at first a distinct Kingdome of it self, yet subordinate and tributary to that of *Mexico*; the King whereof named *Tamgaivan Bimbicha* (as *Las* reporteth) at the first coming of the Spaniards thither, after the conquest of *Mexico*, voluntarily submitted himself to them, and was baptized. Nevertheless afterwards, upon a pretence of I know not what Treason intended by him against them, and which the Spanish Writers themselves professedly think to have been feigned, by command of *Nunnez de Gusman*, President of the Chancery of *Mexico*, he was most inhumanely burnt alive, and the Spaniards seized upon his Kingdome.

9. *Mexicana*, specially so called, is bounded on the East with the Gulf of *Mexico*; on the West with *Mechoacan*: on the North with *Panuco*, and some parts of *New-Gallicia*; and on the South with *Tlascalla*: so called from *Mexico*, which is the chief City of the Province, and of all *America* beside. A large

and rich Country, containing not much less than one hundred and thirty leagues both in length and breadth; and if it yeelds any thing to *Peru* in the plenty of gold and silver, certainly, it much excells it in many other commodities: as namely in all sorts of Fruits, abundance of Cattel, plenty of Corn and Grain; in all which the advantage which this Country hath, not only of *Peru*, but of all the other Provinces of *America* beside, is well known: not to speak any thing of the great plenty and variety of good Fish, which both the Rivers and Lakes of this Country afford, which is very great: insomuch that the very tribute of the one Lake of *Mexico* is said to yeeld an Income of above twenty thousand Crowns yearly, one with another. The People of the Country are generally industrious and active, especially since the Spaniards came among them; rich Merchants, if they apply themselves to it; and they say likewise good Souldiers, when they are trained and employed that way. The chief towns and places of the Province are, 1. *Mexico*, both anciently and at present the Metropolis and Capitall City; being the seat of an Archbishop, and the ordinary Residence of the Vice-Roy and chief Governours of *New-Spain*. Formerly it stood
like

another *Venice*; upon the water, being
 built upon certain Islands within the Lake, and
 surrounded in all the quarters of it with divers
 constant Currents, both of fresh and salt water.
 The old City being destroyed by *Cortez*,
 as we said, it was rebuilt by him more upon the
 main Land, almost upon the banks of the great
 Lake; (for there are two of them, the one of
 salt-water, the other of fresh; which continu-
 ally ebb and flow in one another, and contain
 the compass of the whole, about thirty
 leagues or more: upon which there are
 thought to be not less than forty or fifty
 small *Canoas* or little Boats continually
 lying from one Town to another;) and in
 the midst of a fair Plain, or Champaign Coun-
 try, containing likewise, as some say, not less
 than sixty or seventy leagues in compass, and
 surrounded with mountains of so great height,
 that the tops of them are said to be continu-
 ally covered with snow. At present it is
 thought to be one of the richest Cities of the
 World, abounding (if reports be true) in all
 kind of voluptuous gallantry and bravery,
 even to excess: It is supposed to contain about
 six or seven miles in compass, and to consist of
 above an hundred thousand Houses or Fami-
 lies; whereof not the tenth part Spaniards: but

those that are, be all Gentlemen, I mean as to their garb and manner of living; for they live most splendidly in all respects, both for diet and apparel. For the first, we have spoken much already of the general plenty of things in the Kingdom of *New Spain*, that pertain to this part of pleasure, that it is not to be doubted: and for the second this may be some instance, *viz.* that it is no extraordinary matter to see an *Haz-band* and *Role* all Diamonds, in some ordinary Gentlemen's Hats and of Pearl among the common Citizens and Tradesmen. The Coaches (which most Gentlemen keep) almost covered with gold and silver, richly beset with precious stones, and within ordinarily lined with cloth of gold, and the best *China* silk that can be gotten: of which Coaches, in time of year, at the *Abencade*, they call it, which is, as it were, the *Fiesta* of *Mexico*, and a place made of purpose for recreation and delight, a man shall observe not seldome, above a thousand or two thousand Coaches, full of Ladies and Gallies coming thither only to take the aire and the pleasure, both the one and the other attended with a numerous train of servants and *Mallas* of both sexes. In *la Plateria*, which is but one only street in *Mexico*, nigh to the *Viceroy*

Roys Palace, in less than half an hours space;
 with the turn of an eye, you may see millions
 of wealth in Gold, Silver, and precious Stones;
 in the Gold-smiths and Jewellers shops there-
 abouts. In a word, there is nothing hinders
 Mexico from being the most absolute Citie
 in the World for delight and bravery, but on-
 ly two inconveniences to which it is subject. The
 one is the danger of the Lake; with the Infalla
 whereof it may seem to be almost continually
 threatned, and in the year 1629, did actually
 suffer a very great calamity: the waters break-
 ing through the banks, and drowning a great
 part of the City, with the destruction of much
 People, and the loss of all their goods intirely,
 through the avarice (as is supposed) of the
 Vice-Roy that then was, and some other of
 the Kings Officers, who diverted the money
 that should have been imployed, for the for-
 tifying and repairing of the banks, to their
 proper uses. The other is from the Nature of
 the Soil and ground it self, on which the City
 standeth; which is found to have a tincture of
 of salt-Nitre in it, somewhat strong; and the
 windes partly from the Lake it self, and partly
 from the Hills about it, raising the dust of this
 earth constantly every evening, for many
 moneths of the year together, so violently, that
 the

the Aire is even darkned therewith for some time: the Inhabitants are much annoyed by it and made subject to divers Hypochondriacal pains and infirmities, and sometimes killed with it, especially such as either cannot or care not much to avoid it. The Citie lies about 60 leagues or one hundred and fifty miles distant from the Atlantick or North Sea, from whence by the Port of *Sa. John D' Ulva* or *Vera Cruz*, (which are the usuall landing places) there is a fair and easie march to *Mexico*, by the Cities of *Xalapa*, *Perotia*, *Puebla de los Angeles*, and *Tlascalla*, all of them open and unfortified places (as likewise *Mexico* itself is) and the Country round about very rich and well accommodated with all things. The second town of this Province is *Tescuco*, an ancient and fair Citie seated upon the same Lake six or seven leagues distant from *Mexico*, to which it yeeldeth not much either for beauty or bravery. 3. *Quistlavaca*, a Citie built wholly upon certain Islets within the Lake, and therefore called sometimes by the Spaniards *Venezuela*, or *Little Venice*, having one only passage by Land to it, over a Causey of flint-stone half a league or more in length, and about sixteen or twenty foot broad. 4. *Uztucupulapa*, a City of ten thousand Households or thereabouts,

zabnuts, six leagues distant from *Tescucan*,
 about twenty from *Mexico*. 5. *Atlixco*
 a Burrough of four thousand House-
 holds. 6. *Cuyacan*, of six thousand. All
 these are seated upon the Lake. Further from
 the Lake there is *Cuicuilco*, a great City
 and a rich place, not much inferior to
Mexico. Anciently this City was, as it
 is now, the Sanctuary of the Mexican Kings, and
 the chief place of their barbarous and inhu-
 man Superstitions, where yearly not less than
 five or six thousand Indian Children of both
 sexes were sacrificed to *Virztopuchili*, that is,
 the Devil. It was likewise the chief burying
 place of all the Mexican Nobility, whose
 tombs and Monuments there afforded the
 Spaniards at their first rising of them, an in-
 finite mass of Treasure; and yet not half so
 much, as by report, they both desired and ex-
 pected. 2. *Mastitlan*, a Town pleasantly
 situated upon the top of an huge mountain, in
 the midst of most delicate Groves and shady
 Woods round about it, and reckoned to con-
 tain not less than thirty thousand Inhabitants
 in all, dwelling either in the City, or upon
 the sides of the Mountain. 3. *Ampacque*,
 this is a Town belonging to the Marquis de
Valle, who is of the Posterity of *Correa*, and
 said

said to be seated in the most delicious place
all *New-Spain*. 4. *Acapulco*, a Town
ed upon the South-Sea, or *Mare del Sur*,
belonging to this Province. It is a *Hispanick*
Town and one of the most frequented upon
the South Sea, situate upon a large and spi-
cious Bay of about a league broad at the en-
trance, and affording many convenient sta-
tions and Docks for shipping. At the bottom
of the Bay Westward lyeth the Town, with
strong Castle very opportunely built both for
the command and security of the Port, well
walled and fortified with Bulwarks, and be-
ing a constant Garrison of four hundred
Souldiers in it, or thereabouts. The reason
whereof I suppose may be chiefly this, *viz.* that
from this Port there is the greatest traffick
and intercourse held betwixt the East and
West-Indies, together with the *Philippine*
Islands. The Country hath many rich Mines
of silver in it, and some of Gold: the chiefest
of which first are by *Herera* reported to be
these, *viz.* 1. those of *Pachuca*, fourteen
leagues distant from *Mexico*. 2. Of *Tasco*,
twenty four leagues distant. 3. *Talpa*.
4. *Culcepeque*. 5. *Zacualpa*. 6. *Zupac*.
gno, and divers others.

10. *Tlascalla* is a Province of *New-Spain*

which extendeth it self entirely from one Sea
 another, viz. from the *Atlantick* to *Mare*
Zur, with which it is bounded on the East
 and West parts; lying otherwise and for the
 most part betwixt the Provinces of *Mexicana*
 as spoken of, and that of *Guaxata* which
 followeth; containing in length, viz. from
 the Sea to the other, not much less than an
 hundred leagues, and in some places fourscore
 breadth; but towards the South-Sea growing
 much narrower. It is a Country exceedingly
 plentiful both of Corn and Cattel, full of
 good pasturage, and so plentifully stored with
 Maize, some Wheat, and other Grain, that it
 is counted, as it were, the Granary of *America*.
 The People of this Country, when the
 Spaniards first landed among them, lived in
 the form of a Common-wealth or Free State,
 refusing to be subject to the King of *Mexico*,
 with whom they had almost continuall Warre;
 and upon that account, as hath been said, assi-
 sted *Cortez* in the Conquest of the Kingdom:
 and without whose help 'tis most certain, he
 had never been able to doe any thing. They
 enjoy therefore many speciall Priviledges and
 immunities, more than other *Americans* doe.
 They pay no tribute but only an handfull of
 Wheat yearly for every person, in way of ac-
 knowledgement;

knowledge and otherwise living under
 the protection of the Spaniards, wholly in
 form of their ancient Government. The whole
 Province is said to contain two hundred
 good Towns and Burroughs, and more than
 one thousand Villages, all of them exceeding
 populous, and supposed to contain in the
 whole above a million and half of Natives,
 beside Spaniards, who have some few Colonies
 in the Country for securing of it. The chief
 Towns of the Province are, 1. *Tlaſcalla* it is
 which denominates the whole Country as the
 Metropolis of it. It is a fair town, and com-
 modiously seated in the midst of a large
 fertile Campaign of threescore miles in com-
 pass. It consisteth of four large and beautiful
 streets or quarters, and in the midst of them
 where they all meet, hath a *Piazza*, or Market
 place, equall to that of *Mexico*, and able to
 receive twenty or thirty thousand persons con-
 veniently to buy and sell in it. 2. *Puebla*
de los Angeles, or the Citie of Angels, a town
 built by *Sebastian Ramirez*, a Churchman
 and he that was the first president or chief
 Governour of *Mexico*, under the Crown of
Castile. It was built in the year 1531, almost
 in the road way from *Vera Cruz* to *Mexico*
 and seated in a very delicate and fertile Coun-

and of a good Air. It is a Bishops See,
 and valued at twenty thousand Duckets of
 yearly Rent; the Citie it self supposed to con-
 tain about fifteen hundred Families; where
 there is abundance of excellent cloath made,
 and for fineness not yeelding to the best of
 Spain. 3. *Zempoallan*, seated upon a River of
 the same name. 4. *Napaluca*. 5. *Guanajuato*,
 all of them great and ancient towns of
 the Natives. 6. *Segura de la Frontera*, a Spa-
 nish town, built by Cortez presently upon the
 Conquest of *Mexico*, for the securing of the
 confines, as the name importeth. 7. *Vera Cruz*,
 a town built by Cortez and his Com-
 panions, at their first landing; and where af-
 terward, by a stratagem, and out of a resolu-
 tion either to Conquer or dye in the Country,
 he caused all his ships to be burnt, that his Sol-
 diers might not so much as think of returning
 back from whence they came. The town was
 first built five or six leagues up within land;
 but the place being found not to be so health-
 full, the Inhabitants in a short time deserted it,
 and seated themselves upon a Bay of the Sea
 right over against *S. John D'ullua*. 8. *Adel-
 lino*, another Spanish town, built likewise by
 Cortez, in memory of his own birth place;
 which was *Adelino*, a small town of *Es-
 tramedura*,

medura, a Province of Spain. Lastly, *San
D'alla*, a noted and the most usuall Port
all this Province, and likewise to the City
Mexico it self, from the North Sea: but
difficult entrance, especially to such as are
well acquainted with the passage, or w
Guides; by reason of certain Rocks and qu
sands, wherewith the mouth of the Haven
said to be barred: but within, the station
more safe. It hath likewise two strong Bu
warks or Forts raised, on either side of the e
trance one, to defend the passage.

II. *Guaxaca* hath on the North the Bay
Mexico; on the South *Mare del Sur*; on
the East *Yucatan* and *Chiapa*, which is one
the Provinces of *Guatemala*; on the West
Tlascalla. The Country extendeth it self up
the South Sea about an hundred leagues
length, but from the Sea to the borders
Tlascalla one hundred and twenty: Ea
ward not above half so much; having a good
Aire, and a Soil no less fruitfull, especially
Mulberry trees, and a great abundance
Silks, which the Country affordeth more than
any other Province of *America* beside. Not
it less rich in Mines of gold and silver; the
being scarce a River in the whole Country
but the sands of it are said to be tinged mo

or less with that yellow Metal. It yeeldeth
 likewise great plenty of *Cassia* and *Coarbinele*,
 two rich Commodities: and the People gene-
 rally, if they would takes pains, might be the
 wealthiest, 'tis thought, of any other in *Ame-*
rica: but whether it be through any volunta-
 ry contempt of Riches, or through any natu-
 rall sloathfullness, as yet they seem to pine in
 the midt of plenty, living, for the most part
 of them, little better than from hand to mouth;
 nevertheless exceeding liberall of what they
 have, especially to such as bear the habit of
 Religion, and attend the service of their Souls;
 maintaining in a plentiful and good manner,
 'tis said, no less than one hundred and twen-
 ty Convents of Religious Men, of several Or-
 ders, in this only Province; besides Hospitals,
 schools for the training up of Youth, and
 other places of publique Charity. It is subdivi-
 ded into many particular Provinces; which,
 because they are many and but small, in com-
 parison of some other, we may call *Wapentakes*,
 Hundreds, rather than Provinces; the prin-
 cipall whereof are these that follow, viz.
 1. *Misteca*. 2. *Tusepocque*. 3. *Zapoteca*.
 4. *Guazacoalco*. 5. *Guexaxatla*: and 6. the
 City of *Guaxata*, from whence *Cortez*, after
 his Conquest of *Mexico*, had his title given
 him,

him by the Emperor, *Marquess of the Valley*. It is the richest and most pleasant part of the whole Province, extended in a continued tract together full fifteen leagues or more, lying about fourscore Southward of *Mexico*, wanting neither Mines of gold and silver nor any other of the prime and best Commodities of the *New-World*. The towns of principal note inhabited by the Spaniards in this Province are, first *Antequera*, in the Valley aforesaid, a stately Citie, and beautified with a Cathedrall Church, built with pillars of the finest Marble, of great height and bignesse. 2. *St. Ildophonso*. 3. *St. Iago*, commonly called *St. Iago of the Valley Nexatapa*; yet it self a City fairly seated upon a Hill. 4. *Spirito Santo*, a town built by *Gonsalvo Salazar*, in the year 1526, distant not above three leagues from the Gulf or Bay of *Honduras*. 5. *Aguatuleo*, otherwise called *Guatuleo*, a noted and convenient Haven, or Port-town upon the South Sea, yet pertaining to the Province: A rich place by reason of the trade from *Mexico* to *Peru*, and from *Peru* to *Mexico*, which passeth all through this tract. There are reckoned of the Natives of this Province not less than six hundred and fifty Towns and Villages, and in them above

hundred and fifty thousand persons that pay
tribute; beside Women and Children, and
Indians in great number.

12. *Yucatan* is a Peninsula, or half Island,
compassed for the most part with the Sea;
only to the South west, where it is joyned
to *Guaxaca*: its farther and more Easterly
point looking towards *Cuba*. The whole Pro-
vince contains in compass nine hundred hun-
dred miles or more, the Aire somewhat hot,
and the Soil not altogether so fertile in all
commodities, as some other parts of *New-
Spain* are: yet are the People therefore more
industrious, living for the most part by Handi-
crafts and Trades, and much more willing to
take pains than their Neighbours. They report
some speciall things of this Province of *Yucatan*,
as namely, that the People of the Countrie
used generally, and long before the Spaniards
came thither, a certain Ceremony of Religion,
so much unlike to our Baptism, and which
they called by a name that in their language
signified *Regeneration*, or a *second Birth*; that
they observed it so diligently, that few or none
among them omitted to initiate themselves by
believing, that thereby the *Seeds* and
ground-work of all goodness was laid in
them, and that they were fortified by it against

the assaults and molestations of evil-Spirits. That after they were three or four years old till they came to twelve, they usually were washed and baptized themselves; and that none were permitted among them to marry that were not first initiated after this manner. That they chose likewise a solemn day upon which to doe this; and fasted (at least the Father and Mother of the party to be initiated) alwaies three dayes before: and that a great many of the Natives had a Tradition, or general report among them, that of ancient time this Province of *Yucatan* was possessed and cultivated by a certain People which came thither from the East, after a tedious long wandering and many hardships endured at Sea having escaped the hands of their Enemies only through the power of God, or the Deity they worshiped; who helped them, and made them to pass securely, even through the waves of the Sea. All which, if true, seems not a little to confirm the report which goeth for current in the Welch Chronicles, of one *Madoc Owen* the sonne of *Gwineth*, a Prince of the Countrie, who is said to have fallen upon a farre Countrie this way in his travels; which he liked so well, that having secured to his Companions their safe abode there, during

absence

thence he returned himself into *Wales* for
 Men; and that he transported thither
 many as he could carry in ten Barks full la-
 borers. This he is said to have done about the year
 our Lord 1170. But neither he nor any of
 his Men were ever heard of since; and the suc-
 cess of the expedition, it seems, little enquired
 after by the *Welsh*. However the relation
 is not altogether incredible, or beyond

The chief towns of the Province are, 1. *Me-
 rid* in the Navil of the Country, and the
 seat of the Governor, twelve leagues distant
 from the Sea on either side. 2. *Valladolid*,
 twelve leagues distant from *Merida*. 3. *Cam-
 bray*, a great town consisting of about three
 hundred households or more, when first con-
 quered by the Spaniards; who found such
 monuments of Art and curious industrie in it,
 did clearly argue, that the place had been
 possessed by some People that were not
 barbarous. It is now called *St. Francisco*, and
 surprized in the year 1596 by Captain
Drake, an English man, who took the Gover-
 nor himself and some other persons of quality
 prisoners, and carried them away with him,
 together with a ship richly laden with gold and
 silver, beside other Commodities of good va-

lue. 4. *Tabasco*, by the Spaniards now call
Villa de Nuestra Señora de Victoria, and com-
 monly *Victoria* only, in memory, as 'tis thought
 of the first great victory which Cortez obtain-
 ed over these People at the battle of *Pan-
 chan*, as hath been said. 5. *Oimla*. 6. *Pan-
 ionchan*. 7. *Salamanca*.

All along the Coast of this Country the-
 lye certain Islands, some within the Bay
 Gulf called *Handuras*, pertaining to the
 Province, as 1. *La Zaxa*. 2. *La Descan-
 da*. 3. *Ferniseia*. 4. *Los Negritos*; and so
 without it, as 1. *Zuratan*. 2. *Pantol*. 3. *Mugeret*, or the Island of Women; so named
 by the Spaniards, who at their first discovery
 of these parts, for a long time together com-
 met with none but Women. The chief of these
 is called *Acusamil*, commonly *Cocamil*,
 is fifteen leagues in length, and about 6
 broad, and was, as it were, the thorough-
 or common road of the Spaniards when they
 first discovered the Countries of New Spain.
 For first here landed *Ferdinando de Cortez*,
 after him *John de Grijalva*, and others; and
 last of all, the fortunate *Cortez*. It is now
 called *St. Cruz*.

CHAP. IX.

Of Guatimala.

Guatimala is the last general Province of this Northern part of America, and brings us down to the Isthmus neck of Land, which, as we said, joyneth the Northern and Southern parts of the New-World together. This Countrey, viz. Guatimala, is bounded Northward with the Peninsula of Yucatan abovesaid, and part of the Gulf or Bay of Honduras; on the South with the Mare del Zur; on the East and South-East with Castella aurea; and on the West New-Spain. The length of it lyeth upon the coast of the Mare del Zur, and is said to be little less than three hundred leagues; but the breadth, half so much in any place, and in some very narrow. It is generally a fertile and good Countrey in all respects, but especially aboundeth in Cattell and good Pastures: being subdivided into six inferiour Provinces or Countreys, which are, 1. Chiapa. 2. Verapaz. 3. Guatimala, specially so called. 4. Honduras. 5. Nicaragua: And lastly, 6. Veragua.

2. *Chiapa* is bordered on the West with *New-Spain*; on the East with *Vera paz*: on the North with *Yucatan*: and on the South with *Mare del Sur*. It is a Countrie much shaded with Woods, and those replenished with many fair and goodly trees, of diverse sorts and of the largest size, as Oaks, Pine Cedar, and Cypress trees; besides others which yeeld them a good kinde of Rosin, precious Gums, &c. It hath likewise good plenty of *Cocchinele*: but as for Mines either of gold or silver, I observe not much to be spoken; the Countrie is supposed to afford some, but hitherto no great search hath been made; possibly for want of Labourers to work in the Mines. The only inconvenience which the Countrie seemeth to lye under, is the abundance of Serpents, or Snakes which it breedeth: there are some of them said to be twenty foot long or more; and doe not a little infect the Natives: who yet are not without a general Antidote or Remedy which the Countrie likewise naturally affordeth: which is nothing else but the leaves of some of their trees dried to powder; of which they make a plaister of sovereign efficacie, as 'tis said, against the venome; and otherwise generally good for any old and inveterate sores.

The place of more principall note in this
 Countrey inhabited by the Spaniards, is
Ciudad Real, pleasantly seated in the midst
 of a round Vale or Plain, and almost entire-
 ly encompassed with Hills round about it, in form of an
 Amphitheatre; at the foot of one of which
 standing in the midst of the rest, the City in-
 dwells. It is a Citie specially priviledged by the
 Kings of Spain, of a pure and temperate Aire,
 and the Countrey about plentifully abounding
 both in Corn and Fruit. The *Chiapa*, which
 giveth name to the Valley aforesaid, it is a
 Bishops See, and famous, in part for one of its
 Prelates, viz. *Bartholomew de las Casas*, of the
 Order of Preachers, who was Bishop of this
 Citie, and his memory justly precious among
 the poor Americans at this day, for his Charity
 towards them, and for the stout and zealous
 opposition which he made against the Spaniards
 towards cruel and inhumane dealings with the
 Natives at the beginning of their Conquest, by
 which at last, notwithstanding much diffi-
 culty and resistance made by interested persons
 of the other side, he procured them liberty, and
 an Edict from the Emperor in favour of them,
 whereby they were declared to be *Free Peo-
 ple*, and not *Slaves*; and the Spaniards for-
 bidden to use them any longer as such, or to
 force

force them to any kinde of labour against their wills, or otherwise than by agreement with them, which liberty they enjoy to this day, and though the Spaniards are said to give them very small wages in some places, and for their work in their Sugar Mills (which is no small labor) not above five Royalls or two Shillings six Pence a week, for the maintenance of themselves, their Wives and Children, yet by reason, it is with their consent, and in a Country where all things are plentiful and cheap; their condition is much better than it was, and the favour which that good Bishop did them, never to be forgotten. It is at present a great City and populous, and lyeth almost in the middle way betwixt the Cities of *Mexico* and *Guatemala*. 3. *San Bartolome*. 4. *Tecapalan* and some others belonging to the Natives.

31. *Nova paz*, on the Country of *Turkey*, was so named by the Spaniards, as they say, because it was never conquered by the Sword, but reduced to obedience only by the preaching of the Dominican Friars. It is bounded on the West and South-west with *Chiapa*; on the East with some part of *Guatemala*, and *Honduras*; and on the North with *Jucatan*. It contains about thirty leagues length, and al-

most as much in breadth, being a woody and mountainous Country for the most part, yet well distinguished with Valleys and lower grounds. It is thought to be a little too much subject to rain, which is said to have for nine moneths of the year almost continually; by reason whereof the Country, being otherwise hot, is much annoyed with a kind of Malaria, or great sort Gnats, which spoyle the fruit very much, and are otherwise not a little troublesome to the people. The chief Commodities of this Country, are five kinds of Amber, which some call *liquid amber*, which drops from divers of the trees, and is said to be a Commodity very precious and of much use. *Massick*, *Sassailla*, *Chin*, *thud*, and divers other Medicinall woods, which it affords in great plenty. But as for any Towns or places of much Traffique or note, inhabited by the Spaniards, I finde not any named, save only *St. Augustines*; neer unto which, there is said to be a Cave and Fountain within ground, which converts the water that falleth into it, out of severall lesser Springs, into a kinde of Alabastrer, or stone perfectly white, and fashions it likewise into pillars, statues, and other artificiaall formes very curiously, as Euro reporteth.

b. 4. *Guatimala*, specially so called, bath on
 the West the river *Xicalapa*, which divideth
 from *Vera paz*. On the East it is bounded with
 the Country of *Nicaragua*, on the North with
Honduras, and on the South with *Mar del
 Sur*. The Country by reason of its Neigh-
 bourhood with *Vera paz*, not altogether clear
 of Mountains, but otherwise well watered
 with Rivers, and enriched with fair and fruit-
 full Valleyes, which afford not only good pa-
 sturage, and many great herds of Cattel, but
 likewise good store of Wheate, *Maize* and o-
 ther fruits of the Earth. Great plenty of Cot-
 ton Wooll, generally both here and in the o-
 ther Provinces, viz. of *Vera paz*, *Chiapa*, &c.
 some medicinall woods likewise and liquors,
 and absolutely the best Sulfur of *America*.
 The people generally tractable and well dispo-
 ed, both in poynt of Religion and Civill Go-
 vernment. The Towns of chief note are,
 1. *Guatimala*, otherwise called *St. Jago de
 Guatimala*, the chief City of the Province,
 situate upon the banks of a pleasant River, and
 in all respects convenient but for the Neigh-
 bourhood of two *Vulcans* (as they call them
 at the *West-Indies*) that is, of certain Moun-
 tains, which cast fire and smoak out of them
 more or less continually, and with which, a-
 bout

about the year 1586. it was almost buried with
 ashes and burnt Earth, which the one of them,
 for the space of six moneths together, continu-
 ally belched out in such fearfull quantity,
 that many people were slain, and the City re-
 ceived much damage by it. There are many of
 these *Vulcans* in severall parts of *America*, as
 namely at *Arequipa* in the Kingdome of *Peru*,
 at *Puebla de los Angeles*, in the Province of
Flasquilla abovesaid; a Mountain of so great
 height, that they are said to goe little less than
 thirty leagues, turning and winding, before
 they can reach the top of it, and others in se-
 verall other places. They are generally Moun-
 tains of great height, and running sharp up-
 wards, but at the top containing some quan-
 tity of plain and level grownd; in the midst
 whereof is the pit or hole, out of which a-
 boundance of smoak and fiery ashes are vom-
 ited almost continually, and so deep, that they
 are supposed for the most part to reach to the
 very bottom of the Mountain. Some of these
Vulcans cast forth neither fire nor smoak, yet
 are clearly seen to burn at the bottom with a
 quick fire, and which is so extremely hot, that
 it instantly melteth Iron, or any other Metall
 that is cast into it; as by experience hath been
 found. For some, conceiving that the matter
 which

which maintains these fires, within the bowels of the Earth so long together, can be nothing els but melted Gold, have endeavoured severall times to extract and draw it forth in certain Vessels of Iron and Brass, which they have caused to be let down into the bottom of the *Fulcan* or pit, by long Iron chaines made for purpose, but as we said, the extreme heat and force of the fire below, alwayes melted them before they could be drawn up again, and by that meanes hath hitherto rendered all such attempts frustrate. 2. *Sr. Salvador* forty leagues distant from *Guatimala* Eastward, and seated upon the River *Guacapa*. 3. *Acapulla*, Town of the Natives situated at the mouth of the said River, and is, as it were, the port Town to *Sr. Salvador*. 4. *Trinidad*, a Town of great resort, being the generall Empery or place of Traffique, for all sorts of Commodities, betwixt the people of New Spain and *Pern*. 5. *Sr. Michaels* two or three leagues distant from the Bay *Panaba*, upon the South Sea. 6. *Xeres de la Frontera*, in the Coast of this Province, towards the borders of *Nicaragua*. 7. *Honduras* hath on the South Coast above said, on the West a certain Bay or Rivier of the Sea, which they call *Golfo Dulce*, from

the abundance of fresh waters which run into it from all parts: On the North and North-east the Atlantick Ocean, and somewhat to the South-east *Nicaragua*. It contains in length viz. from East to West, coasting along upon the Sea, about one hundred and fifty leagues, and in breadth fourscore. The Country rich both in Corn and Pasturage, being said to be very much advantaged that way, by the constant overflowings of the Rivers, which it hath very many, about *Michael-mass* time, and which the people order to well, that they water their very Gardens, and exceedingly fertilize the whol Champaign, or lower parts of the ground by them. The Country is not thought to be without some good Mines both of Gold and Silver: but the Natives so little covetous of wealth, and the Spaniards, it seemes, so much busied elsewhere, that as yet no great discoveries have been made, save only about *Guanacoa*, *a Dias*, and some few other places, where there are good Mines.

The cheif Towns of this Province are, *New Valladolid*, anciently called *Comayagua*, seated in a pleasant and fruitfull Valley upon the banks of the River *Chumalucan*, forty leagues distant from the Sea. *Guanacoa*, thirty leagues distant from *Valladolid*.

delide Westward, made a Colony of Spaniards
 by *Gabriel de Rojas* in the year 1530, for de-
 fence of the Mines thereabouts, against some
 Savages that were not then reduced. 3. *San*
Pedro, a place of great wealth and traffick
 and the usuall residence of the Farmours
 the Kings customes for this Province. 4. *Puer-*
to de Cavallos, ten leagues distant from *San*
Pedro, so called from the abundance of Ho-
 ses, which in a great tempest and storm at Sea
 the Spaniards were forced to cast over board
 at this place. It is one of the most noted Har-
 bours of these parts, and naturally strong, yet
 so ill guarded formerly, that the English twice
 pillaged it, viz. in the year 1591, under Cap-
 tain *Newport*, and in the year 1596, under
 Captain *Shirley*. What the state of it at pre-
 sent is, I cannot say, only that it is a good in-
 let into a rich Country. 5. *St. Thomas de*
Castile, eighteen leagues distant from *Caval-*
los, another strong place, and to which, they
 say, the Colony of *Puerto Cavallos* was late-
 ly transpoted. 6. *Truxillo*, a Town pleasantly
 seated betwixt two Rivers at the foot of a
 Mountain, not far from the *Cape de Honda-*
ras, which at this Town first begins to show
 it self, running far out into the Sea, from
 whence the shore still withdrawing it self,

were more inwards, all along the Coast of this Province, till it joyneth with *Jucatan*; where is made a very spacious and goodly Bay, called commonly the Bay of *Honduras*, otherwise *Golfo dulce*, as we said, having many good and secure Stations for shipping. 7. *St. George de Olancho*, so called from the Valley of *Olancho*, in which it is seated: a rich part of the Country both in Mines and otherwise; inso-much that the Governors of this Province and these of *Nicaragua*, more than once fought for the possession of it in the field; and it was some time before the King of Spain could determine the Controversie between them.

8. *Nicaragua* is a Country of this Province bordered Northward with *Honduras*; on the East with the Atlantick Ocean and part of *Nicaragua*; on the South with *Mare del car*; and on the West with *Guatemala*, being called by some the new Kingdome of *Leon*. It hath few Rivers in it; the want whereof is supplied by the benefit of a great Lake, in the midst of the Country, called by the Spaniards *Laguna de Nicaragua*, containing, as is supposed, above one hundred in leagues compass. It emptyes it self by the Port of *St. Juan* into the Atlantick or North Sea, but reacheth as far as the South or

Mare del Zur, at least within a very few leagues; and from whence some Spanish Captains are said to have made a passage, though with much difficulty, into the Lake, and from thence to the North Sea. It is abundant well stored with good fish, but withall much haunted with *Crocodiles*; and the Count about it so plentiful in all things, especiallly Cattel, Cotten-wooll, Sugars, and all kind of Fruits, that the Spaniards commonly call it *Mahomet's Paradise*; the People said to be the most Hispanioliz'd of all other America since the Conquest, both in behaviour, appearance, manners, &c. The chief Towns are 1. *Leon*. 2. *Nicaragua*, a Bishops See. 3. *Granada*, both of them seated upon the Lake very commodiously, yet distant one from the other fourteen or fifteen leagues at least. 4. *Sagua*, thirty leagues distant from *Granada*, having some veins of silver about it. 5. *Joan*, a town almost at the end or mouth of the Lake, from whence, by a long Channel of about three or four leagues, it disembogues or empties itself into the Sea, at the Port *Sr. Juan*. 6. *Realejo*: This is, as it were, the *Chattam* of America, being a place on the South-Sea, where the King of Spain hath all his ships built, which are built of American timber, and inhabited

few or none but Shipwrights, Mariners, and
 of that profession. 6. *Nicoya*, a town
 giveth name to a little Territorie, which
 is reckon'd as a distinct part of this Province
 it self. 7. *Avirana*. 8. *Carago*, forty
 leagues distant from *Nicoya*, and lying almost
 in the midst of the Isthmus or Strait of *Darien*,
 equally distant both from the North and
 South Sea; on both which it is said likewise
 to have a convenient Port or Haven for ship-
 ping. *Veragua* is bounded on the West with
 a part of *Nicaragua*, which some call *Casta-
 no*, & make a distinct Province of this Coun-
 try, being indeed a very wealthy part of it:
 to the East it hath the district, or Country of
Veragua, being otherwise washed on all sides
 by the Sea. It hath its name from a River of
 the same name in this tract, by which it was first
 discovered. The Country is for the most part
 mountainous, and the Soil outwardly but
 poor, but recompencing all defects with the
 abundance of its more inward wealth. I
 mean in the richness of its Mines; of which it
 is said to afford many, and so inexhaustibly
 good, that the Spaniards here know
 much of their wealth; although, by reason
 of the stoutness and untamableness of the Na-

tives; it were a long time, and they met with
 no small difficulties, before they could make
 themselves masters of the Treasure. The
 Towns they have here are, 1. *La Concepcion*
 lying at the mouth of a River so named, and
 the seat of the Governor. 2. *La Trinidad*
 upon the banks of the same River likewise, but
 more down towards *Port Beleno*, and about
 six leagues Eastward of *Concepcion*. 3. *San Felipe*
 twelve leagues more to the South, where the
 Spaniards melt their gold, and cast it into
 Bars or Ingots. 4. *Carlas*, a town they have upon
 the Coast of *Mare del Zur*. 5. *Philippe*
 another on the West of *Carlas*; both of these
 well seated upon a large and capacious Bay
 before which there lyeth a fry of certain
 Islands, to the number of thirty or more, where
 the Spaniards are said to have wholly dis-
 pled long since, by forcing the Natives
 into the Continent, to work in the Mines.
 usually they did before the Emperors prohi-
 bition: but now they use Slaves or Negros,
 they buy for that purpose from *Galley*
 other parts.

the Spaniards have been
 and good, that the Spaniards have been
 collected by the Spaniards of the Islands
 and the Spaniards have been

CHAP. X.

Peruana; or the Southern part of America.

I. **T**He Country of *Pern*, understanding by it all that part of *America* which lyeth on the South of *Darien*, is generally resembled to the form of a Pyramid; the Basis whereof, that is (as I conceive) the more Southerly parts of it towards *Magellanica* and the Streits, extend themselves largely both East and West, becoming more sharp and streit towards the North, and those parts by which it is joyned to *Mexicana*: in the whole it is supposed to contain a circuit of seventeen thousand miles at least, and is watered with four of the greatest Rivers of the World, beside abundance of lesseſs Streams, which issuing from the *Andes* and other Mountains of the Countrey, doe run from all parts both into the North and South Sea, much fertilizing the Countries through which they pass. The four principall are these. 1. *Orellana*, otherwise called the River of *Amazons*. This riseth in the Province of *Pern*, and runneth a course of lit-

the less than five thousand miles, discharging
 it self at last into the North Sea, through
 channel as some say, of threescore leagues
 broad, and yet with such a violent current
 stream, that it is said to keep its natural colour
 and taste almost thirty miles in the Sea. 2. *Oyogwe*, a River of the Province of Guiana
 whose head or spring is not yet discovered,
 is said to be Navigable a thousand miles to-
 gether by the tallest ships, and no less than
 thousand by Pinnaces and smaller Vessels,
 dischargeth it self likewise into the North
 Sea by fifteen several channels or mouths, with
 thereby several Islands, some whereof are
 to be of good bigness, and to lye at a distance
 of one hundred miles or more one from
 other. 3. *Maragnon*, a River of a yet longer
 course than any of the former, being, as it is
 no less than six thousand miles from its head
 which is out of the *Andes in Peru*, to its mouth
 which is likewise into the North Sea, at
Cape Blanco, by a channel of seventy leagues
 in breadth. 4. *Rio de la Plata*, otherwise cal-
 led *Plataguy*, a River of two thousand miles
 course, and falling, as the rest, into the North
 Sea, by a channel of threescore miles over,
 about thirty four degrees Southward of the
 Line, towards *Magellans Straits*.

This Southern part of *America* containeth
 these particular Provinces following, all of
 them wealthy and large, viz. *Castella aurea*,
 or *Golden Castile*. 2. *Nova-Granada*, or the
 new *Kingdome*, as they call it. 3. *Peru*, speci-
 ally so called. 4. *Chile*. 5. *Paraguay*. 6. *Bra-*
zil. 7. *Guiana*: And 8. *Paria*; with some
 lesser Islands adjoyning to all or most of these
 provinces, and commonly reckoned as part of
 them.

CHAP. XI.

Of *Castella Aurea*.

C*astella del oro*, as the Spaniards call
 it, or *golden Castile*, taketh up all
 the rest of the Isthmus or streit of *Darien*,
 which hath not been yet spoken of, being
 bounded Eastward and to the North East with
 the Atlantick Ocean, and on the West with
Mare del Zur, and some part of *Veragua*:
 Southward it hath the new *Kingdome* or *Grana-*
da. It is called sometimes *Terra firma*, because
 it was one of the first parts of firm Land which
 the Spaniards touched upon, after they had
 passed so many Islands, as seemed, for some

time, to block up and barre them from the Continent of *America*. It is subdivided into these inferiour Provinces or Countries,

1. *Panama*; 2. *Darien*. 3. *Nova-Andaluzia*. 4. *St. Martha*: And 5. the little Province of *la Hacha*.

2. *Panama*, commonly called the District or Circle of *Panama*, is bounded Eastward with the Gulf or Bay of *Urraba*, by which is separate from the rest of the Continent of this Southern part of *America*: on the West it hath *Veragua*, one of the Provinces of *Guatemala*; being on both the other sides washed with the Sea. It is supposed to contain in length from *Cartagena* and *Popayan*, to the confines of *Veragua*, about fourscore or ninety leagues; in breadth not above threescore any part: and where it is narrowest, viz. betwixt the City of *Panama* and *Nomberto Dios*, if measured by a right line, not above six or seven over from Sea to Sea. It lyeth almost under the Equinoctial line, but a few degrees Northward of it, and therefore somewhat hot, and by the neighbourhood of both Seas, subject to a foggy and gross Air in comparison of some other parts; so that it is not counted generally so healthfull a Country, especially for strangers, and in the Sum-

er time. The chief towns and places which
 the Spaniards inhabit here are, 1. *St. Philip*,
 otherwise called *Porto Belle*, from the good
 Haven adjoining to it. A strong town and at
 present the Staple of Trade betwixt *Panama*
 and *Spain*: the Haven fortified likewise with
 two strong Castles: notwithstanding which,
 it was both surprized and well pillaged by the
 English, under the Command of Captain
Parker, about the year 1601, and the Gover-
 nour himself *Pedro Melendez* taken prisoner.
 2. *Nombre de Dios*, so named by *Didaco Ni-
 queza*, a Spanish Adventurer, who being driven
 by distress of weather, and ready to be wrack-
 ed; bad his Men here get on shore *en Nombre
 de Dios* (that is, in Gods name.) The town
 was very well seated for Commerce and Trade
 at the beginning, and enjoyed it for a good
 while; but the place being found something
 less healthfull, and otherwise obnoxious to
 Enemies at Sea, the Trade and chief Inhabi-
 tants are since removed to *Porto Belle*, or
St. Philip aforesaid, as to a more fortified and
 secure place. 3. *Acla*, a Town upon the
 same Coast, but lying South-East of *Nombre
 de Dios*. 4. *Nata*, commonly called *St. Jago
 de Nata*, situated on the West side of this Pro-
 vince, upon *Mare del Sur*, or the South Sea,
 about

about thirty leagues distance from *Panamá* towards the borders of *Veragua*. *Panamá* the chief City of the Province, being also a Bishop's See, who is Suffragan to the Archbishop of *Lima*, and the ordinary residence of the Governour and Courts of Justice for these parts. It is seated likewise upon the South Sea, and so neer, that at high water, the ships are said to ride even under the walls. Through this town the wealth both of *Peru* and *Spain* passeth once every year: from *Spain* by *Nombé de Dios* and *Porto Bello*, from whence whatsoever Merchandise or other Commodities come from *Spain*, are transported to *Panamá* by Land, and from thence by Sea to all the parts of *Peru*; and by *Panamá*, whatsoever comes from *Peru*, to be sent into *Spain*. It hath commonly a strong Garrison of Souldiers in it, and is doubtless a place otherwise well fortified, being of so great importance. Lastly *La Cruz Real*, a few leagues distant from *Panamá*, and for the most part inhabited by *Negros*.

30 *Darien* hath on the North the District, or Circle of *Panamá*; on the South the new Kingdome of *Grenada*. Eastward it is bounded with the Gulf of *Urraba* abovesaid, and some part of the River *Darien*, which giveth

name

come to the Province; and to the West with the South Sea; of a more temperate Aire by farre than that of *Panama*, and a Soil so admirably fructifull and lusty, that they say Melons, Cucumbers, and generally all other Fruits of the Garden are ripe and fit to gather within twenty dayes or less, after their first sowing. The chief and indeed only Town of this tract is *Darien*, called anciently by the first Founders of it *S. Maria Antigua*, and by others *the Antiquie of Darien*; being one of the first Towns that were built by the Spaniards on the firm Land. *Eastward of Darien and the Gulf of Darien*

4. *Eastward of Darien and the Gulf of Darien* lyeth the Countrie of *New Andalusia*; some call it, though that name be likewise (and perhaps more truly) attributed to the Province of *Paria* hereafter to be spoken of: on the East it hath the Countrie called *S. Martha*: on the North the main Ocean; and *New Granada* towards the South. It is for the most part a Mountainous Countrey, and full of Woods, which, they say, yeeld abundance of Rosin, Gumms, and some very good Balsam. But the Plains, by reason of much rain, to which the Countrey is subject, especially for some times of the year, of but a spewy and cold Soil. The Spaniards, at their first coming, found

found it a rich Country, not so much from the nature and profits of the Soil (though it be said to have some Mines in it, and those of Gold) but by reason of a certain opinion, and respect, which the Americans of these parts are generally said to have born towards this Country, inasmuch that they would be brought and buried therein from other places very remote; and according to the custome of the Country, not without good store of Gold and other Jewels, according to the quality and condition of the Person that was buried: of which the Spaniards soon gained intelligence, and in ransacking the Graves and Monuments of the Dead, are supposed to have found an infinite Mass of Treasure: But those Mines are long since exhausted.

The places of chief importance here are, 1. *Cartagena*, situate upon the North Sea in a sandy *Peninsula* or half Island, well built, and for the bigness of it, of good wealth and riches; as the English well found under Sir *Francis Drake*, in the year 1585, when they took the place, and having pillaged it, carried away, besides abundance of Treasure; no less than two hundred and forty brass peices of Ordinance. It is counted one of the best

Havens

Rivers belonging to the firme land of *America*.
 2. *Tolu*, by the Spaniards now called *Sr. Jago*, twelve leagues distant from *Cartagena*; a place memorable for the excellent *Balsam* which is brought from thence, & commonly called the *Balsam of Tolu*. 3. *Sr. Cruz de Mopox*, a neare Town, seated a little above the confluence of the two Rivers *Sr. Martha* and *Magdalena*, which water this Province. 4. *Baran* *de Nalamba*, a place of great Traffique, especially for all Commodities of the new Kingdome of *Granada*; it standeth upon the banks of the *Magdalena* River, and about six leagues distant from the Sea. 5. *Buena Vista*, otherwise called *Sr. Sebastian de Buena Vista*, a Town commodiously seated upon a rising ground not far from the Gulf of *Urabá* or the Sound of *Darien*, about a league and half from the Sea; and lastly *Villa de Sr. Maria*, thirty leagues southward of *Cartagena*.
 5. *Sr. Maria*, so called from the cheif City of the Province, is bordered on the West with *New Andalusia*; on the East with *Rio de la Hacha*; on the North with the Ocean, and on the South with *New Granada*. It is about threescore and ten leagues in length, and not much less in breadth; a mountainous Country

Country likewise for the most part, and the ground not much commended, but only for some fruits of the Ordinary growth of Spain, viz. Oranges, Limons, &c. which thrive here very well. The air upon the Coast very hot, but more within land as extremely cold, viz. upon the Mountains. The Country is well watered with Rivers, the chiefest of it *Rio Grande*, as they call it, or the great River of *Magdalena*, which rising in the Mountains of *New Granada*, falleth down into this province, & empties it self into the Sea, betwixt the Cities of *St. Martha* and *Cartagena*, though at a distance of ten or twenty leagues from either, with a double stream, and such a violent course, that as *Amos* testifies, it is counted not a little dangerous, to attempt the carriage of it sometimes, viz. when the Tyde and the stream are contrary. The chief Towns are, 1. *St. Martha*, seated upon the sea coast, having a safe and very convenient Haven belonging to it, and well defended from the winds by the advantage of an high Mountain, lying almost right over against it. It is no great Town but rich, for the biggeſs; at least it was found so when *Sir Francis Drake* surprised it, in the year 1595. What it was the year following, when *Sir Anthony Shirley* called there, and

and in
I
the A
St. J
League
the Rey
banks
a little
Magdene
sources
in
hole
the Sp
canse
Snow.
ry of
anna
6.
Provin
Mar
water
or Ba
a smal
distan
Haven
and f
and P
Spain

and in the year 1630, when the Dutch took
 1. I cannot say: 2. *Tenariffe* on the banks of
 the *Magdalene*, forty leagues distant from
Sr. Martha: 3. *Villa de las Palmas*, twenty
 leagues southward of *Tenariff*: 4. *Ciudad de*
los Reyes in the Valley of *Upur*, and upon the
 banks of a large River called *Guataporta*, which
 a little below this Town falleth into the *Mag-*
dalene. It is a Frontire place, and but ill neigh-
 boured by reason of certain unreduced Sava-
 ges inhabiting the Mountain *Tayrona*, and
 those other Mountains of this Province, which
 the Spaniards call *las Sierras Nevadas*, be-
 cause their tops are perpetually covered with
 Snow. 5. *New-Salamanca*, in the same Val-
 ley of *Upur*, famous for its Brass Mines. 6. *O-*
canna and others.

6. *Rio de la Hacha* is the name of a little
 Province lying on the North-East of *Sr.*
Martha, washed on all other parts with the
 waters of the main Ocean, or with the Gulf
 or Bay of *Venezuela*. It taketh its name from
 a small Town called *de la Hacha*, about a mile
 distant from the Sea, having no convenient
 Haven, but otherwise seated in a soile very rich
 and fertill, not only of all sorts of Fruits and
 Plants, especially such as are brought from
Spain, but likewise in many Mines of Gold,
 Gemmes

Gemmes of great size and value, and many excellent Salt Witches, as they call them. It is eight leagues distant from *Salamanca* afore said, and eighteen from *Cape Vela* the most westerly Point, or Foreland of the Bay of *Veracruz*; and with the rest, had the hard luck to be surpris'd and pillaged by the English with Sir *Francis Drake* in the year 1592. 2. *Rancheria* six leagues Eastward of *la Habana* inhabited chiefly by Pearl-fishers, or such as get their living for the most part by fishing for Pearle; which was wont to be good on these Coasts. 3. *Tapia* and some others.

CHAP. XII.

Of New-Granada.

THe new Kingdome of *Granada*, 'tis commonly called, was for the most part both discovered and conquered by *Gonzalvo Ximenez*, about the yeare 1536, and with so good success that in less than a year space, the whole Country was quietly settled under the Spaniards government, and the Captain with his Small Company had made shift to gather together such a mass of Treasures

sure, as may seem almost incredible, viz.
 from the *Reguli*, or petty Princes of those
 Countries, whom he had either destroyed or
 made Tributary. *Laz* casteth up the Summe
 thus, one hundred ninety one thousand, two
 hundred ninety four *Pesos* of absolute fine
 Gold, thirty seven thousand of Gold less
 fine, and eighteen thousand of the coarsest
 sort of all. Of Emeralds great and small eigh-
 teen hundred, besides abundance of other
 rich booty. The Country is bounded on the
 North with *Castella aurea* aforesaid; on the
 West with *Mare del Zur*; on the East with
Mexuela; the Southern parts of it being not
 yet well discovered, by reason of certain huge
 and unpassable Mountains, which block it up
 wholly on that side, save only where a pas-
 sage is kept open into the Province of *Pern*,
 specially so called. It containeth in length a-
 bout one hundred and thirty leagues, and not
 much less in breadth, being for the most part
 very healthfull Country, and abounding in
 mines of the best sort of Metal, beside others
 of Brass and Iron. It is subdivided into these
 two Provinces, viz. *Granada*, specially so cal-
 led: *Popayana*.

Granada, specially so called, is a Country
 of a very temperate and good aire, neither sub-

ject to much heat, nor to extremity of cold
 the reason of this may seem to be its nearness
 to the Line, from which it is distant North-
 ward but a very few degrees. The Country ex-
 ceeding fruitfull both of Corn and Cattle,
 affording rich pasturage, and many great
 herds of Cattel, many good Mines, as
 of Gold as other Metals; and in that part
 of it which is called *Tonia*, as great plenty
 the fairest sort of Emeralds. Some parts of
 are woody; and among other sorts very good
 both for Timber and Fuel. there is one
 which the Natives call *Guaicum*, a most
 nable wood, and of sovereign use, they say,
 those that are subject to the *Lues Venerea*, or
 such like Maladies. The People of the Coun-
 try generally tall of stature, and of a fine
 constitution, but much more given to sports
 and pastime, than to any kind of labor or in-
 dustry. The Towns and places of chief im-
 portance are, 1. *St. Fe*, commonly called
Fe de Bageta, which was the old name of the
 Province, and to distinguish it from another
St. Fe in the Country of *New-Mexico*,
 was said. It is the Metropolis and Capital
 City of this Province, an Archbishops see, and
 the ordinary residence of the Governor, built
 by *Gonsalvo Jimenez*, a Spanish Native

Canada in *Old-Spain*, upon the Lake called
Sanabita, and is inhabited at this present by
 five hundred Families of Spaniards. 2. *St.*
Michael, twelve leagues Northward of *St.*
Michael, and a well traded Town. 3. *Tecayma*,
 situate in the territory of the *Panches*, which
 is a certain barbarous People of this Country,
 yet perfectly reduced, and possessing not
 the worst part of it. It is fifteen leagues di-
 stant from *St. Fay*, towards the North-East,
 lying situate on the banks of *Pari*, a small Ri-
 ver, a little above its confluence into the *Ma-
 gister*. 4. *Trinidad*, seated on the banks of ano-
 ther River, called *Zarbi*, in a convenient place
 and good Soil, and the Country about it rich
 abounding in Veins of Chrissall, Emerald,
 Diamonds, Chalcedonies, and other Gemmes
 of good account. 5. *Tania*, a strong Town, built
 very advantageously for defence on the top
 of a hill, &c is both a Garrison and place of re-
 treat against the Savages, which sometimes infest
 the Tract, and also well traded Empory.
 6. *Pampelona*, 60 leagues from *St. Fay* to the
 North-east, a rich place both for Mines of gold,
 which it affordeth, and also for great herds
 of Cattel, which the Country breeds and
 maintains. 7. *La Palma* 8. *Adorla*, the fur-
 thest Town of this Province North-eastward
 towards

towards *Venezuela*. On the South-east there is only *St. Juan de los Rios*, or *St. John* the *Plaines*, fifty leagues distant from *St. F.* but seated in a rich Angle of the Countie and where there are good Veins of gold.

3. *Popayana*, the other part of this New Kingdome, is bordered on the West with part of *Granada* last spoken of; from which the River *St. Martha* divides it for the most part. On the North it hath *Nova Andalusia* or *Catagena*; on the West *Mare del Zur*; and on the South *Quito*, or rather some unreduced Countries lying betwixt them both. It extends in length above one hundred leagues from North to South, but in breadth, viz., betwixt the River *St. Martha*, and the South Sea, not much above forty or fifty. The Country is said to be a little too much subject to rain, yet not so, but that the fertility of the soil and the industry of the Inhabitants in most places very well. The places of chief note in it are

1. *Popayan*, situate on the banks of a fair River, but not named; and in the midst of a Plain, in a place of great wealth; and enjoying a good aire. It is a Bishops See, and the ordinary Residence of the Governour of the Province. 2. *Antiochia*, otherwise called *St. Fide* *de Antiochia*, on the borders of *New Andalusia*.

3. *Caramanta*, seated likewise on the
 banks of the River *St. Martha*. 4. *St. Anne*
 the Cantred, on Hundred of *Auzerna*, a
 town neatly situate upon the side of an hill
 betwixt two Rivers, and in the midst of a
 so no less pleasant and fertil. 5. *St. Jago de*
San Pedro, so named from the Territory in which
 standeth, rich and famous for its Mines of
 Silver, which it is said, to have many and very
 rich. 6. *New-Carthago* twenty leagues di-
 stant from *St. Jago*. 7. *Bonaventura*,
 situate on a Bay of the South Sea, bearing
 the same name. A small Town, but of great enter-
 prise and trade, especially for conveying the
 commodities of *New-Spain* unto *Papayan* and
 other places of this Province. 8. *Timana*, four-
 ty leagues distant from *Parayan*, and sea-
 ted at the Foot of the *Andes* toward the East.
 9. *San Juan de Baste*, so called from its
 situation in a Valley of rich pasturage. 10. *San*
Justo de la Plaza, in the South east con-
 tinent of this Province, so named from the
 Mines of Silver, which are found thereabouts.
 11. *Almaguer*. 12. *Madrigal*, I should say,
 of them situate in a barren soil, but that
 soil may be counted barren, that bears
 nothing.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the Kingdom of Peru.

PERU, in the Southern part of *America*, was anciently a great mighty Kingdom, as *Mexico* in the North, and fell under the power of the Spaniards much after the same manner, that the Kingdom of *Mexico* did, viz. through the divisions and differences among the People themselves: The manner and occasion briefly thus: *Huayna Capac*, the last *Inca*, or King of Peru, had, beside many others, two Sons which chiefly loved; the one by a lawful Wife, near Kinswomen, called *Huascar*; the other by a Concubine named *Mabalipsa*; between whom, at his death, he divided his Kingdom, settling the one, viz. *Mabalipsa*, at *Quito*, making him King of all the Provinces belonging to it, and which, for the most part, he had conquered; and the other, viz. *Huascar*, at *Cusco*, making him King of Peru, and of the Provinces about it, at a distance of five hundred leagues one from another, thereby giving to either of them a Dominion large enough, if reason could have satisfied any

But *Huascar* rested not long content, claiming that a Bastard Brother should share much with him in his Kingdome, contrary to the more just interest of some of his other brothers, and to the custom of the *Inca* his ancestors, who alwaies ruled as Monarchs, admitting any division of their Kingdoms. Whereupon differences and emulations arise betwixt the two Brothers; *Atabalipa*, King of *Quito*, is commanded to appear at *Cusco*, and to assist at the Funeral solemnities of *Mayna Capac* their Father, and to doe homage for his Kingdome; which he doth not refuse: only desireth the King his Brother not to oblige him to come so far, and through countries so unsafe, without an attendance suitable to a King, and that might secure his journey: which pretence of his was not thought unreasonable. So he brings along with him an Army of thirty thousand men; which, through the negligence and too much security of *Huascar*'s Officers of Warre, was permitted to come so neer *Cusco*, that with it, after some Battels fought, he taketh prisoner *Huascar* himself, King of *Peru*, puts to death all the *Incas* or Children of the Blood Royal, that he could get into his power; and in this manner, for some time, holds the Kingdom;

though not without much difficulty, by reason of the hatred which the people generally bear towards him, for his cruelty towards the Royall Progenie; and the opposition which divers of *Huacari* Captains made against him in several parts.

Things being in this condition at *Casco* among the Natives, the Spaniards that were at *Panama*, having rested there full fifteen years since the Conquest of *Mexico*, without making any further discovery upon the South Sea than the *Islands of Pearls*, which lye not above sixteen or seventeen leagues off from *Panama*, resolve, about this time, to make some further search of the Continent by Sea. The business was undertaken chiefly by one *Franco Pizarro*, born at *Truxillo* in *Spain*, a Man of but mean parentage and fortune, but yet a good Souldier, and *Diego Almagro*, a rich Merchant of *Panama*. At first they met with many difficulties and discouragements in the Design; *Pizarro* being full eight moneths at Sea, failing of that course, which now, having better knowledge of the Countrey, they easily dispatch in fourteen or fifteen dayes, his men some of them dying, and others deserting the service, though with the apparent hazzard of their lives: so that at eight moneths end he found

and himself only with fourteeh Men in a
 poor Island, and in the most destitute condition
 that could be. Yet being himself of an un-
 daunted courage and resolution, and those
 few men he had with him of the same minde
 with himself, they all resolved rather to dye
 than to give over the Desigⁿ. So putting again
 to Sea, they fall at last into the River of *Tama-
 ra*, which in a few dayes brings them to a
 town and fortified place called likewise *Tama-
 ra*, where they found Inhabitants and a place
 most agreeable to their desires; viz. where they
 found good plenty of Gold; for which, not-
 withstanding in a condition to fight, they were content
 to present to seem Merchants; and so for a
 few petty Commodities which they had
 brought with them, of no value, 'tis said they
 received of the Natives the full quantity of
 thirty thousand *pezos* of pure gold; which re-
 vived their spirits not a little. Whereupon
 finding the Countrey to be good and likely to
 afford much Treasure, they return back again
 to *Panama*, make declaration of the Coun-
 trie they had discovered, and sollicite for fur-
 ther license to subdue and conquer it. Which
 having obtained, *Pizarro*, with four other of
 his Brothers, stout and resolute men like him-
 self, a competent number of ships, and about

two hundred Souldiers, prosecute the Design and appear at *Casca* with their little Army, just at the time that the differences there were hottest, and that *Huascar* the King was newly become prisoner to his Brother *Atabalipa* who, although at first he seemed to contain the small numbers of the Spaniards, and count them little better than mad-men, that would venture so farre into a strange Countie, no better provided than he took them to be, and upon such an extravagant pretence, as they seemed to him, which they told him was the cause of their coming; yet after a while, having heard the noise of their Ordinance, and little tasted how sharp their Swords were, he was content to become prisoner himself. The Spaniards at first treated him well, and put him in such hopes of liberty, that out of confidence to gain it, and that he might enjoy the Kingdome, thought tributary to the Spaniards himself alone, he caused his Brother the King *Huascar*, to be put secretly to death, and disguised the matter to the Spaniards, as if it had been done against his will; which they, intending other matters, did not much examine. To obtain his liberty, he offered the Spaniards to give them the room wherein they were, filled up with gold and silver as high as a Souldier

could reach with the point of his sword; and, as some say, performed it, at least the greater part of it: Yet were the Spaniards so farre from granting him liberty, according to his expectation and their promise, that not long after they took away his life, most basely strangling him in prison, after they had received of him, as 'tis credibly reported, above ten millions of gold and silver together: upon pretences indeed of Treason, and some dangerous plottings against them, by *Atabalipa* and his People; (a criminal piece of Treason doubtless, for a poor Prince, injuriously imprisoned, to endeavour his liberty, and his subjects to assist him the best they could:) Notwithstanding which, the Spanish Writers themselves doe generally dislike the Fact, and some of them with detestation enough. *God, the righteous Judge*, (saith mine Author *Espita Vaz*) seeing this villanous Act, suffered none of those Spaniards to dye by the course of nature, but brought them all to a vile and shameful end: Which was very true: for although upon the death of *Atabalipa*, the Spaniards held themselves for Masters of the Countrey, and *Pizarro* quickly obtained of the Emperor, to be made Marquess; yet long it was before the Indians could be wholly subdued, *Manga Inca*, the Brother

Brother of *Atabalipa* making a stout and sharp
 resistance for a good while together, defeating
 the Spaniards in three or four several encoun-
 ters (in which *Diego* and *Johan Pizarro* bro-
 thers to the Marquess were slain) and twice
 taking the Citie of *Cusco* from them by force.
 And when at last he happened to be overcome,
 and driven to fly to the Mountains, the Con-
 querors, viz. *Almagro* and *Pizarro*, to whom
 the Emperor had given the command of the
 Countrie in several, fall out among themselves,
 chiefly about the bounds of their respective
 Dominions, Civil Warres ensue betwixt them;
 in which first of all *Almagro* is taken prisoner
 by *Pizarro*, sentenced to death, and executed
 without mercy; and not long after *Pizarro*
 himself murdered in his own house, by a Bas-
 tard sonne of *Almagro* named *Diego*; who
 thereupon had the confidence to take upon
 him the government, and to encounter the
 Licentiate *Vaca de Castro*, the Emperors
 Commissioner, in the open field; where being
 worsted and taken, he afterward lost his head
 at *Cusco*. After this, *Blasius Nunez Vela*
 being made Vice-Roy of *Peru*, and governing
 somewhat severely, *Gonzales Pizarro* the
 fourth Brother, rebelleth, with many Spani-
 ards with him; against whom *Vela Nunez*,
 the

the Vice.
 purpose,
 and put to
 Roy, the
 the Rebel
 being
 ured Vi
 ioneer,
 ro, pre
 dy, in
 er, wh
 ers, ha
 after this
 of the E
 ernor G
 and beh
 Carnival
 in Com
 fall the
 and aliv
 iber in
 mission
 Marquis
 concern
 in it i
 Martin
 Marquis
 quest'st

Vice-Roy's Brother, is sent; but to little purpose, being taken prisoner by the Pizarrists, and put to death. This so incenseth the Vice-Roy, that himself in person marcheth against the Rebels; but to his own ruine. For a Battle being fought in the fields of *Quita*, the said Vice-Roy had the ill hap to be made prisoner, and by *Carvaial*, Lieutenant to *Pizarro*, presently, without further process, caused to dye, in revenge, as 'tis supposed, for his brother, whom the Vice-Roy, among many others, had lately sentenced to death. *Pizarro* after this defeats *Centeno*, another General of the Emperors; but was at last, by the Governor *Gasca*, defeated himself, taken prisoner, and beheaded for his Rebellion, together with *Carvaial* his Lieutenant, and divers other of his Complices: so that there remained now of all the five Brothers *Pizarro*, only *Ferdinand* alive, who, as some report, was sent prisoner into *Spain*, by the Emperors Commissioner; others say, that his Brother the Marquess sent him thither with the process concerning *Almagro's* death. However, certain it is, that in *Spain* he dyed a prisoner. *Martin de Alcantara*, half-brother to the Marquess, was murdered with him in the Marquess's house; *Garcia Alvarado* was stab'd to death.

death by one of the Almagrists; And what became of *Pedro Baldivia*, with some others shall be shewed in the description of *Chile*. Thus perished, by the just hand of God, and through their own mutual dissensions, ambition, and covetousness, those first Conquerors of *Pero*, viz. *Pizarro* and his Companions, none of them all leaving so much as a good name behind him: and of their issue little is spoken. The Marquis himself is said to have had a sonne by a sister of *Asabalipa*, whom they call *Dona Angelina*, but he dyed young, and whether he were legitimate or no, it may be doubted. But the Factions of the *Pizarrists* and *Almagrists* being extinct, by the diligence and moderation of succeeding Governors, the affairs of *Pero* came by degrees to be better settled, & the People, either willingly or by constraint, were persuaded to acknowledge the Spanish Government, and to live quietly in most parts of the Continent.

2. The Dominion of the Kings of *Castile*, which in some sense, and by some writers on occasion, is called the Kingdom of *Pero*, was extended by the last *Juan*, or King, *Hayn*, the *Capo*, from North to South above a thousand leagues together, comprehending

not only a great part of the Province
of *Chile* towards the South, but also the New-
Kingdome of *Granada* and divers other Pro-
vinces to the North: but *Peru* properly so cal-
led, containeth little more than half so much,
viz. six hundred leagues in length, and about
fifty or three score in breadth; except only in
some places, as in the Country of *Charapoya*,
where 'tis thought, it may be one hundred
leagues over from the *Andes* to the South Sea.
It is bounded on the East and North-east with
that vast ridge of Mountains which they call
the *Andes*; on the West it is washed with *Al-
laulaur*; on the North it hath the Country of
Mayen; and on the South *Chile*. It is com-
monly divided into three parts, which they call
the *Plains*, the *Hill-country*, and the *Andes*.
The *Plains* are that part of the Country which
lie along upon the Sea Coast, being for the
most part a meer level without any Hills at all.
The *Sierra*, as they call it, or *Hill-Country* is
that part of *Peru*, which is partly mountainous
and partly plain, fertill and well inhabited in
both. The *Andes* are so high, rocky, and inac-
cessible, that they are scarce inhabited at all
but by Savages, save only upon the skirts of
them. The *Plains* from the Sea shore to the
Hill-Country, are for the most part about ten
leagues

leagues over or broad, upon which it never
 raineth all the year long. The *Hill-Country*
 commonly twenty leagues in breadth where
 narrowest; and from *September* to *Aprill* has
 rain, the rest of the year generally being fair
 weather. But on the *Andes*, which take up all the
 rest of the Country of *Peru*, it raineth almost
 continually all the year long. In the *Hill*
Country, Their Summer begins in *Aprill*,
 is said, and ends in *September*; but in the
Plaines, it begins in *October* and ends in *May*.
 So that in the space of one day a man may
 taste both Summer and Winter; he scorches
 with excessive heat in the morning, and is
 well nipt with cold before night. The *Andes*
 generally are covered with thick Woods and
 wild Forests; the *Hill-Country* for a great
 part naked and open; the *Plains* in many
 places sandy and dry, and would be much more
 scorched with heat, when they are, but for the
 neighbourhood of the Sea, which affords them
 many cooling gales from the South and South
 west windes; whose property, although it be
 naturally in other parts to be tempestuous, yet
 bring rain and foul weather, yet here there is
 nothing but Serenity and fair Sun-shine days
 all the year long, although these windes blow
 almost without ceasing upon the Country.

and no other at any time, whereas the *Sierra*
 Hill countrys have winde from every coast,
 and such as bringeth all sorts of weather with
 Rain, Hail, Frost, Snow, great claps of
 Thunder, &c. The Countrie affordeth not so
 much Cattel of the breed of *Europe* as some
 other Provinces of *America*; but instead
 of these, both the Woods and Pastures are re-
 venished, with great multitudes of the *Vicu-*
g and *Pacos* above mentioned, which are of
 great profit & service. The *Pacos* here are said
 to be as big as some young Heifer of two years
 old, bearing a fleece like Sheep, and their flesh
 is less pleasant than the Mutton of *Europe*.
 The great wealth of this Countrie lyes out
 in sight, in the bowels of the Earth, viz. in
 these rich and, as they may seem, inexhau-
 stible Mines both of gold and silver, which, as
 is well known, this Countrie of *Peru* afford-
 eth more than any other Province of *America*.
 The People are said to be, at least ex-
 teriorly, of greater simplicity than some other
 Americans, both in point of behavior and
 judgement, yet of good courage in the wars
 and fearless of death: They are noted also to
 be dissemblers, and not alwaies to declare their
 intentions truly and plainly; and which is worse
 in all, to have bin given over to that foul sin

of Sodomy; in so much that their Women were generally found to be of small esteem with them, to be used no better than slaves and most cruelly beaten by them upon every light occasion. For both which (their unnatural filthiness and inhumanity) if it please the Divine Justice to deliver them into the hands of those who used them likewise cruelly who can deny but that the Judgements of God were just, and that they received *such recompence* for their works, as the Apostle saith *Rom. 1. 13. Was meet?*

The Countrey is generally divided into the *Juridicall Resorts*, as they call them, or Courts of Appeal, which are *Quito, Lima, and Charco* but the particular Provinces, as they are commonly observed by Geographers, said to be six. 1. *Quito*. 2. *Los Quixos*. 3. *Lima*. 4. *Cusco*. 5. *Charco*. And 6. *Colla*.

3. *Quito* is the first Province of Peru towards the North, or the new Kingdom of *Granada*, with which on that side it is bounded having on the West *Mare del Sur*; on the South *Lima*; and on the East *Los Quixos*. It lyeth in a manner right under the Line; Soil reasonably fertill, and well stored with Cattel, especially with the *Pacos* or Peruvian Sheep; having plenty also of Fish and Fowls.

ed stor
of the
ake a C
filk fo
m, Sar
chief
Royall
state
most de
the sacri
fent
aly ca
ie bui
tain ri
North
by L
w qui
It is
anard
ed and
ed in
od of
very m
en it
ing cir
had it
stedly
not de

ed store of Cotton-wool, in which the Peo-
 ple of the Countie are especially industrious,
 make a Cloath or Stuff thereof, equall almost
 to silk for fineness. Much Tobacco, *Gummi-
 res, Sarsaparilla*, and other medicinall Plants.
 The chief Towns are, 1. *Caranguez*, anciently
 Royall Cicie, where stood a sumptuous
 and stately Palace of the Kings of Peru, now
 almost deserted. 2. *Ottavalla*, another place
 of the same dignitie, and the same condition at
 present with *Caranguez*. 3. *Quito*, com-
 monly called *S. Francisco de Quito*: It is a
 Towne built by the Spaniards, at the foot of a
 high ridg of Mountains, which it hath on
 the North and North-West side of it, and are
 crossed by *Laet*, to cross the whole Countie of
 Peru quite over from the South to the North
 side. It is inhabited by five hundred Families of
 Spaniards at least, beside Natives and well for-
 tified and might be thought a town very well
 situated in all respects, but for the neighbour-
 hood of a Vulcan, which at times annoyeth
 the Town very much; as namely in the year 1560,
 when it vomited out such abundance of fla-
 ming cinders and other sulphurous matter,
 that had it not been for a shewre of rain unex-
 pectedly falling, would have much damaged,
 if not destroyed, the place. 4. *Tacunga* fif-

teen leagues distant from *Cusco*. 5. *Tumbamba*, fourty leagues distant from the
 6. *Tbomebamba*. 7. *Cuenza*, threescore and
 four leagues from *Quito* on another road
 but environned on all sides with Mines be
 of gold and silver, brass, iron, and likewise
 some veins of sulphur. 8. *Loxa*, sixte
 leagues Southward of *Cuenza*, and seat
 pleasantly betwixt two Rivers, in the middle
 the rich Valley or Plain called *Guixibamba*.
 9. *Zamorra*, twenty leagues Eastward
Loxa. These are all Towns inhabited by Spaniards,
 and lye more within land. Towards the
 Sea, and upon the Sea coasts, there is first
erto Viejo, so called because it was the
 Town the Spaniards possessed on this Continent;
 a place of no very good Aire, and therefore
 not much frequented. 2. *Mantua*, another
 Sea Town, and of good resort, for the
 reason of the Trade which is here chiefly
 ven betwixt *Panama* and *Peru*. 3. *Guaiquil*,
St. Jago de Guaiquil, a famous and well
 quented Empory, seated upon an arme of
 Sea, not far from the mouth of the said River
Guaiquil. 4. *Castro*, a Colonie of Spaniards
 towards that part of this Province which is
 call *Provincia de las Esmauldias*, or the Land
 of Emeralds. 5. *St. Michaels*, the first Co

which
 led by
 all Tow
 quented
 the poin
 South
 gain C
 Island
 pillage
 Los
 ch-East
 ally Ea
 iana,
 len Co
 Cusco.
 thing
 chief T
 1559
 es fro
 ceo to
 4. Sev
 Spaniards
 part of
 1. V
 las A
 you ma
 in it w
 Lima
 Mission

which the Spaniards built in this Countrey,
ed by the Natives *Piura*. 6. *Payta*, a
all Town, yet neighboured by a safe and well
mented Haven, guarded against the winds
he point *St. Helena* on the North; and on
South with *Punta Piura*; yet burnt by
tain *Cavendish* in the year 1587, and the
Island *Puna* neer adjoyning, ransacked
pillaged.

Los Quixos lyeth South and to the
th-East of *Quito*, being bordered more
ly Eastward with a part of the Province
Quiana, called by some *El dorada*, or the
en Countrey: on the South it hath *Lima*
Cusco. Of the Countrey it self there is not
thing observed that may seem peculiar:
chief Towns are, 1. *Baeza*, built in the
1559 by *Ramirez de Avila*, eighteen
es from *Cusco*. 2. *Archidona*, twenty
es to the South-East of *Baeza*. 3. *Avi-*
4. *Sevilla del Oro*. All of them Colonies
Spaniards. Then is there in the *Sierra*, or
part of the Countrey, more towards the
es, 1. *Halladidit*. 2. *Loyola*. 3. *St. Ja-*
las Montañas; all Colonies likewise,
you may know the Countrey hath some-
in it worth the looking after.

Lima, called also *Los Reyes*, hath on

the East *Collao* and some part of *Cajamarca* on the North *Las Quixas*; on the West *Arica* and *Del Duero*; and on the South *Chiriqui*. The Countrie extendeth it self in length upon the Coasts of the South Sea two hundred and some say full three hundred leagues in length viz. from the Cape del *Aguia* Northward, the borders of *Quito* as far as *Arequipa* wards the South: the soil reasonably fertile in all things, as being much more equally divided into Hill and Plain Countrie, and much better Peopled than some other Provinces. The most observable and important in it are

1. *Miraflores*, as the Spaniards call it, a seated and wealthy Town in the Valley of *Urubamba*, five leagues distant from the Sea, where it hath likewise a good Haven or Port.
2. *Truxillo*, two or three leagues distant from the Sea, the Haven whereof is said to be better but not so safe. The Town it self is seated on the banks of a pleasant River in the Valley of *Chiriqui*, consisting of five hundred families or more, the Aire very healthfull, and the Countrie thereabouts as fruitfull and good as any of these parts of *America*, especially abounding in Corn, Sugar-Cane, and Gold.
3. *La Parilla*, twenty leagues Southward from *Truxillo* in the Valley called *Santa*, and

neighbor

neighbour'd with rich Mines of silver lately
 discovered. 4. *Arcata*, seated among the
 vineyards of the Valley of *Changay*, ten leagues
 from *Lima* northward. 5. *Lima*, by the Spa-
 niards commonly called *la Ciudad de los Reyes*,
 or the City of Kings, so named because *Pizarro*
 who built it layd the first stone on Twelfth
 day, 1533, which they call *The Feast of the*
Kings. It is seated in the Valley of *Lima*, one
 of the fruitfullest parts of all *Peru*, and so
 neatly built, that all the chief streets of the
 Citie open upon a fair Market-place, or *Piaz-
 za*, of such a large square, that upon the sides
 thereof are built, in a stately and convenient
 manner the Cathedral Church and Palace of
 the Archbishop, the Vice-Roy's Palace, and
 Courts of Justice, with the Exchequer or pub-
 lique Treasury, the Town-House, or place
 where the Citie Magistrates meet and hold
 their Courts, the publique Armory or Maga-
 zine, and divers other fair buildings of the
 nobility and better sort of Citizens. The
 whole City is environed round about with
 soft delicate fields and pleasant gardens, and
 hath a Citizens house within, but by the opor-
 tunity of a River which runneth by it, is well
 supplied with water. Briefly, as it is the Me-
 tropolis of *Peru*, that is, the chief and principall

Citie for Authority and Dignity, so is it like
 wile the chiefest for delight and wealth. 6. *Callao*,
Isle, this is the Haven or Port Town to *Lima*
 and but two leagues distant from it : A Town
 of six or seven hundred Families, all or most
 of them Sea-men ; and not a house in it but
 well provided of Cellar-room and Stowage
 for Merchandise, which is there received from
 all parts, both coming from and going to the
 Sea. It was, with *Lima* it self, surprized by *Francis Drake*, in the year 1579, and the
 Cellars searched as well as could be done in
 short a time : whereupon, since it is said to
 be fortified with two strong Bulwarks, a wall
 of earth, and about thirty piece of Ordnance
 planted on the Works. 7. *Pachacama*, four
 leagues Southward of *Lima*, memorable chiefly
 for *Pizarro's* good fortune here, who is re-
 ported to have found in one only old Temple
 of the Natives, the quantity of nine hundred
 thousand Duckets of gold and silver, besides
 what his Souldiers are supposed to have seized
 on and conveyed away before he came. 8. *Guarco*, a Colony of three hundred Spaniards,
 sixteen leagues to the Southward of *Pachacama*,
 rounded with the best fields of Wheat in all *Peru*. 9. *Valverde*, a good
 Town inhabited by five hundred Spaniards

and though at sixteen leagues distance from the Sea, yet well graded and rich. The Valley wherein it lyeth, and from which it taketh its name, affording the best Vines of *America* to *Castro Verreina*, threescore leagues distant from *Lima* to the South East. It lyeth in the Valley of *Chocolocha*, and is a rich place, by reason of the good Mines of silver which are about it, and the abundance of the best sort of Tobacco. 11. *Arequipa*, a pleasant and delightfome town in the Valley of *Quilichua*, one hundred and twenty leagues distant from *Lima* Southward; of a temperate and fresh Aire, a flourishing Soile, and the Town very rich and frequented; by reason that through it much of the silver of *Potosi* and divers other Mines the caravants, that is designed for *Spain*, passeth yearly to be shipped for *Panama*; at a Haven belonging to this Town, though at a distance, as some say, of 110 or 121 leagues. 12. *Caxamalca*, more within land towards the North; a place chiefly memorable for the imprisonment & murder of *Arabalipa*, the last King of *Peru*, whom the Spaniards overthrew and took prisoner neer to this place, and afterwards used as hath been said. Lastly 13. *Leon de Guanuco*, so called from the Territory wherein it standeth, a rich and pleasant place, being

being anciently a Palace of the Kings of Peru very magnificent and stately, now likewise much beautified with Houses both of the Spanish and Peruvian Nobility, some Convents of Religious men, and a Colledge of Jesuites.

6. *Cusco* is the farre greater part of the Province of Peru, containing generally all the *Sierra* or Hill Countries, and those parts of the *Andes* likewise which lye Southward of the little Province or Cantred of *Guanuco*, being coasted Westward and to the North-west with *Lima*; Eastward with *Los Quixos*, and some part of *Gaiana*; and on the South with *Churuc*, enjoying for the most part a temperate and good Aire, neither over-heated with the scorching Sun in the day, nor damped with any cold mists or dewes in the Evening, as some parts of the Plains of Peru are; but well watered with many fresh Rivers, which make the Valleys and lower grounds of it good pasture, and to maintain great Herds of Cattel. The Woods especially stored with the *Coca*, whose leafe is counted so restorative as we said Chap. 7. and with much excellent Venison. The principall Towns and places of Trade in it are first *Bombon*, situate upon a Lake called *Chinchacocha*, said to be ten leagues in compass, begirt round about almost with hills, and

neighbored
fant Vill
all of th
hill enco
Mount
by the S
and wel
threesco
Eastwa
Inca's;
situate,
Count
Town
poor N
tance
Quick
and w
year r
land S
tives.
and a
one h
stant
roun
it fell
yet a
it be
Mor
bne

neighbour'd with many other lesser but pleasant Villages. 2. *Pizaro*, once a Palace Royall of the *Inca's*, seated on the top of a little hill encompass'd with other Rocky and higher Mountains on all sides. 3. *Guamanga*, called by the Spaniards *St. Juan de la Vittoria*, a fair and well built City, and an Episcopall See, threescore and ten leagues distant from *Lima* Eastward. 4. *Bilca*, another Palace of the *Inca's*, now a good Town of the Natives, and situate, as is supposed, in the very midst of the Countrey of *Peru*. 5. *Guancavelica*, a new Town raised from the condition of a very poor Village, to a place of very great importance and traffique, only by the Mines of Quick-silver, of which we spake Chap. 23. and which were first discovered there in the year 1566. It is now inhabited by two thousand Spaniards at least, and twice as many Natives. 6. *Cusco*, the chief City of the Province, and anciently the seat of the Kings of *Peru*, one hundred and twenty leagues or more distant from *Lima*, to the South East, begirt round about with Mountains, and the Citie it self seated upon a rugged and unequal Soile; yet anciently very magnificent and beautifull; it being the custome of the *Incas* or Peruvian Monarchs, that every one of their Nobility should

should build themselves a Palace in that Citie where the Palace Royall was. The *Inca* Palace here was justly counted one of the wonders of the World: it was built on the top of a very high Mountain, on the North side of the Citie, walled round about, and for the most part of it, with three several walls all of massy stones, and those of such huge stupendious bigness, yet most exactly laid together and fitted one with another, that the Spaniards, considering the Indians had neither Instruments of Iron, or any thing else to polish and fashion them, nor Engins to draw them up to that height, nor so much as Carts to fetch them from the Quarries and places where they were found, which was eight or nine leagues distance, and over no small Rivers, said plainly, 'twas the work of the Devil, and not of Man, to lay them there: which seeming a thing not so easily to be supposed, I must, for my part, as plainly confess, 'tis a Problem somewhat above my capacity at present to resolve, viz. how it should come to pass, that not only here, but in divers other parts of the Countrey, where the *Incas* and their Nobility had their Palaces, such evident Monuments of absolute Art and Skill should be found among a People so absolutely ignorant and

and un-
icans w
demolis
dwelling
to stand
the anc
thereof
so huge
know n
haps da
Monum
cence 8
were v
leys or
which
had ca
most C
it was
the pe
quarte
parts
in the
Mark
The v
is not
tenfil
the I
Silver

and unacquainted with Art, as the Americans were reported to be. It is now quite demolished, and converted to private dwellings; only the walls are permitted to stand, as well to testify the greatness of the ancient structure, as because the stones thereof (as mine Author *Las* reporteth) are so hugely ponderous & big, that the Spaniards know not well how to remove them, and perhaps dare not venture upon it. Many other Monuments there were of the *Incas* Magnificence & greatness, as beside their Temples which were very stately and rich. Those publick Cawseys or high-ways, pay'd and laid with stone, which the *Incas*, with incredible cost and pains had caused to be made from *Cusco* to the utmost Confines of their Kingdome, as large as it was, onely for the ease and commoditie of the people; they all meeting at *Cusco* from all quarters, like so many lines from severall parts of the Circumference, and Concentring in the midst of the City, upon a *Piazza* or Market-place, one of the fairest in all *Peru*. The wealth which the Spaniards found here is not to be estimated; all the Vessels, and Utensills, of what sort soever, belonging to the *Incas* Palace, being said to be of perfect Silver or Gold; all the Roomes and Chambers

bers of the Palace wainscoted and ceiled with Gold, beside an infinite number of Birds, Beasts, Fowles, Serpents and other creatures, carved and wrought all of Gold or Silver. Nor was it otherwise in due proportion, in the Palaces of the Nobility : all were found inestimably wealthy and rich : And yet 'tis thought, what they found above ground, was nothing, in comparison of that which they met with in the ransacking of Cellars, Vaults, and other subterraneous places, where the poor conquered Peruvians had endeavoured to convey it out of sight ; which was such that to this day, they say, those treasures are not exhausted, but that in digging upon occasion under ground, they still chop upon some good quantities of concealed Metals. The City at present is thought to contain some thirteen or fourteten thousand Inhabitants, whereof the third part only Spaniards, the rest Natives.

7. *St. Francisco de la victoria*, a Colony of Spaniards situate at the foot of the *Andes*, twenty leagues distant from *Cusco*. 8. *St. Juan del oro*, another Colony in the Valley of *Carabaya*, neighboured with rich Mines of the purest Gold of *Pera*. Beyond which places, more towards the *Andes*, there are said to lie certain Countries as yet undiscovered,

much

much famed for gold Mines, but of such un-
passable difficulty, that hitherto the Spaniards,
though divers times attempting it, have not
been able to effect any thing answerable to
their desires.

8. *Collao* lyeth Southward of those Coun-
tries, which goe under the generall name of
the Province of *Cusco*, having on the West
Lima, on the South *Charcas*; but Eastward
and to the North-east, it is shut up by a ridge
of Mountaines, running in one body or con-
tinued Tract from the confines of *Collao*, as
far as the City of *Cusco*, where they divide.
The Country generally plain, commodiously
watered in all parts with fresh Rivers, and
consequently affording rich pasturage and
good herds of Cattell. It is thought to be
the most populous Country of all *Peru*; what
through the soundness and good temperate
of the aire, what through the richness and fer-
tility of the Soile. The chief Towns and places
of note in it, being 1. *Chuquinga*, a great
Town, and held to be naturally almost im-
pregnable, as being environed round about,
either with deep unfordable Waters, or with
Mountaine unpassable, and having one only
Cawley leading to it, reported to be for two
or three leagues together no broader than to
permit

permit one single person to march conveniently upon it. 2. *Ayavite*, by the Spaniards called *Lau Sepulturus*, being a place especially embellished by the stately Monuments of the Peruvian Nobility, which were found there. 3. *Hatuncolla*, the Metropolis or chief Town of this Province, seated upon the banks of the River *Carabaya*, whose sands are very much famed for Gold. 4. *Chinquia*, a Colony of Spaniards upon the banks of *Tiricaca*, one of the greatest Lakes that belong to America, said to be fourscore leagues in compass, having many small Islands in it of a good and fruitful soil, abounding in fish and variety of Sea-fowl. It is supposed to be fourscore leagues distant likewise from the South Sea, having only one Estuary or Mouth, which is something strait, but of such a deep water and violent stream, that, as *Acosta* testifieth of it, it is not possible to build a Bridge of stone, or timber over it. But the Natives instead thereof have laid a Bridge of straw upon it, which serves well; viz. so many great bundles of straw sedge or such like matter, well and surely made up, and fastened together, as will reach from one side or bank of the Estuary to another, at which likewise having made them sure, they cast some good quantity of more straw and

sedge
 venient
 pass th
 doe o
 place o
 and so
 thereof
 himself,
 and Du
 Estuary
 only for
 lions bu
 hood ch
 re laid
 piece, fil
 sick.
 statues
 brought
 ed like
 it, not
 en use
 by other
 Nust
 face. It
 ated up
 mitfull
 de: It b
 face, for
 sedg

ledge upon them, and have a Bridge very convenient, upon which they doe both securely pass themselves, and also drive Castell and doe other necessary business. The Town is a place of extraordinary Wealth and Trading, and so considerable, that the Governour thereof is always named by the King of Spain himself, and his place estimated at fifty thousand Duckats *per annum*. 5. *Tiaguanao* at the Estuary or Mouth of the Lake, memorable only for the ruines of certain great and stupendous buildings, which anciently, it seems, have stood there; the stones whereof (some of them) are said to have been of thirty foot length a piece, fifteen foot broad, and six or seven foot thick. There were likewise found the statues of certain men excellently carved and wrought, of a Gigantine Stature or bigness, and likewise vested in forraim and strange hats, not at all used, nor ever known to have been used by the Peruvians themselves, or by any other of the present Nations of *America*. *Nuestra Sennora de la Paz*, or our Lady of Peace. It is but a small Town, yet pleasantly situated upon the banks of a River in a fair and fruitful Plain, having Mountaines on either side. It lyeth almost in the middle of the Province, foure score leagues distant from *Casca*,

and as many from *Potozi*: the Country round about it not a little famous for the best sort of Mines. There are also, 7. *Chilane*. 8. *Acota*. 9. *Pomata*, and some others; all of them good Towns, but not so considerable as those other.

7. *Los Charcas* is the furthest Country Southward of the Province of *Perna*, reaching up as far as *Chile*; with which on the South it is bordered, having on the North *Lima* and *Col-lao*; on the West *Mare del Zur*, and on the East some Countries not yet well discovered, which lie betwixt it and the Province of *Paraguay*, or *de la Plata*. The Country is said to be in length about one hundred and fifty leagues measuring it directly, or in a right line from North to South; but measuring it about along the Sea Coast much above two hundred. Not very rich either in Corn or Cattel, although in some parts it wanteth not good Pasturage: but of unparalleld wealth, in respect of the Mines both of Gold, and Silver which are here digged; the principall whereof are those of *Potozi*, and *Penco* above mentioned. The Towns and places of chiefest importance are, 1. *la Plata*, or the *Silver Town* so called from the rich Mines of Silver thereabouts, namely those of *Potro*, which is a Hill

adjoyning to the Town. It had been anciently a Mine of the *Incas*, or Kings of *Peru*, held out and continued so rich, even to its discovery by the Spaniards, that 'tis thought, *Pizarro* if reason could have ruled, might here only have raised himself a rent two hundred thousand Duckets *per annum*. His desire and hopes, first to finde more at *Paz*, and afterwards his ambition and greeds to have or command all, carryed him violent courses which proved his ruin, as has been said. The Town is conveniently seated in a fruitfull soil, honoured with the Residence of the Governour of the Province, and a Bishops See, said to be the richest of *Peru*, viz. of fourescore thousand Duckets *per annum*. 2. *Oropesa*, a place of good Measure as a man may perceive by the name; it lieth in the rich and pleasant Valley of *Cochabamba*, twenty leagues distant from *la Plata*. 3. *Potosy*, before the discovery of the Mines a poor sorry Village, now the richest and best populated Town of the Province, inhabited by less than four or five thousand Spaniards, of the Natives many more, beside above twenty thousand poor Negro-Slaves and other people belonging unto and labouring in the Mines; whose dwellings are in divers little Villages

Villages thereabouts; a place hugely resorted unto, both by Merchants for profit, and Gallants for their pleasure, and though lying in a cold and but barren soil outwardly, yet so well accomodated with all things, that nothing can be desired more: and we need not wonder it should be so; for where money is there is alwayes the best Market. The place lyeth in one and twenty degrees and some minutes of Southern latitude, eighteen leagues distant from *La Plata*, and about one hundred and sixty from *Cusco*; and may be found both from the North and South Sea. From the South by the way of *Arica*, which is a Port Haven upon *Mare del Zur*, seventy leagues or thereabouts distant from it, whither all or most part of the Silver of *Potozi*, *Porca*, and other Mines of this province, is carryed yearly upon the backs of the *Pacos*, or Sheep of *Peru* above mentioned, to be shipped thence for *Panama*, or *Lima*, and so for Spain. From the North it may be found by the River of *de la Plata*, which falleth into the Atlantic Ocean thirty four degrees and some minutes Southward of the Line, and hath many good Townes of Spaniards seated either upon, or neerer unto it, as namely *Buenos Ayres*, *Santa Corduba*, *St. Jago del Erco*, and others,

which through a plain, and for the most part
 fertile Country, the March to *Potozi* is so
 grand open, that it may seem rather tedious
 and difficult. For they lay it indeed com-
 monly at a distance of three hundred leagues
 more from *Buenos Ayres*, which is the far-
 est Town from it toward the Sea; but per-
 haps upon tryall, it would not be found so
 such; it being otherwise certainly reported,
 that the Spaniards of *Potozi* and parts there-
 abouts, doe frequently come down and trade
 with those of *Buenos Ayres*, for divers sorts
 of European Merchandise, and others, and
 could do much more, if the King of Spain
 would give leave, which if the distance were so
 great betwixt them, perhaps were not so pro-
 bable. 4. *Misque*. 5. *Lagunilla*. 6. *Tarixa*,
 other Towns, but such as furnish *Potozi*
 with all sorts of good Wine, Wheate, Maize,
 and the choicest fruits. 8. *Arica* the
 best known and frequented Port of this
 Country, upon *Mare del Zur*, of which we
 see in the description of *Potozi*. It was taken
 and sacked by Sir *Francis Drake*, in the
 year 1577, who found good booty both
 in the Town and in the ships; but is since,
 as they say, better fortified both with Bul-
 lets and Ordinance, as doubtless the

great importance of the place requires

CHAP. XIII.

Of the Province of Chile.

I. **F**ollowing the coast of *Mare del Z*
 or the South Sea, the next Province
 pertaining formerly to the Kingdome of *P*
 is that of *Chile*. This is the most Southerly
 Province of the whole Country of *Ameri*
 reaching up as far as *Magallanes* Streits, w
 which to the Southward it is bounded: Nor
 ward it hath a Desert, and undiscovered
 Country, lying betwixt it and the confines
Pern called *Atacama*: on the West it h
Mare del Zur, and on the East up to *Ri*
la Plata, the Atlantick or North Sea, w
 some Countries undiscovered, which int
 pose betwixt it and *Paraguay* to the Nor
 East. It lyeth all of it beyond the Tropique
Capricorn, in a temperate Zone, and extend
 it self in length from the borders of *Pern*,
 the mouth of the Streits five hundred leag
 or more; but the breadth of it neither equ
 nor certain. They say 'tis called *Chile* fr
 the word *Chil*, which signifies cold; it see

in their language as well as ours, it being ge-
 nerally a cold and bleak Country, the aire in
 many parts of it so extremely sharp and pier-
 cing, that both Horse and Rider sometimes
 in travelling are frozen to death, as the Spani-
 ards found by experience in their first search
 and discovery of the Country, under the Con-
 duct of *Diego Almagro*, who is said to have left
 the greatest part of his men dead behinde him
 in this manner. But this is chiefly towards the
Andes, and on the Sea coast; the more inland
 parts of it, though mountainous also in some
 parts, yet are more temperate, and being also
 well watered with Rivers, are much more
 fruitfull than the other, affording both Wheat,
 and *Maiz*, and likewise other grain, excel-
 lent Pasturage in many places and great store
 of Cattel, Wine, Honey, not without many &
 rich Mines both of Gold and Silver. The Na-
 tives of this Country were found the most
 stout and warlike of all the Americans, the
 Spaniards had hitherto met withall, fighting
 with them and oftentimes defeating them in
 the open field surprising and sacking their
 Towns, and last of all taking their Captain
 and Commander in chief Prisoner. This was
Pedro Ballevia, one of those good men that
 consented to the death of *Atabalipa* the last

King of *Pera*, after a greater ranfome accepted and paid, than perhaps the King of *Spain* could well raise on a sudden, if he had occasion to use it for himself. The *Araucans* (for so are the People called that had him prisoner) are said to have entertained him for a while gallantly, making him a feast; but for his last draught gave him a cup of melted gold, which the poor man was forced to take down, and so dyed.

The whole Province generally is divided first into *Chile*, specially so called; and secondly *Magellanica*, or that part which lyeth more Southward down to the Straits of *Magellan*. *Chile*, properly so called, is bordered Northward with the Desert, and barren Countrey of *Atacama* above mentioned; on the South with *Magellanica*; on the West with *Atacama del Sur*; Eastward and to the North-East with some parts of *Pagaya*, or rather with some undiscovered Countries, lying betwixt them both. The length of it from North to South is reckoned to be little less than three hundred leagues, and generally of a fruitfull Soile, affording beside abundance of gold and silver, both Corn, Cattel, Vineyards, and divers sorts of

Fruits,

fruits, equall both for kinde and plenty as
 in it self, and sundry other parts of *Europe*.
 the Aire likewise for the most part temperate,
 and the People, in their manners and conditi-
 ons approaching much neerer to the Civility
 and likewise subtilty of *Europeans*, than other
Americans did: which doubtless may be at-
 tributed to the conformity of the Climates
 under which they lye, agreeable to those of
Europe; though otherwise in respect of the
 sphere and seasons of the year, there be Diame-
 tricall difference betwixt us, as for example,
 their Spring beginning in *September*, which is
 our Autumn; and their Autumn in *March*,
 which is our Spring: their longest day being
 that of *St. Lucy* on the eleventh of *December*,
 which is our shortest; and their shortest be-
 ing *St. Barnabas*, viz. the eleventh of *June*,
 which is our longest, &c.

The Towns of chiefest note and impor-
 tance in this Province are first *Gopapo*, an old
 Town in the most Northerly parts of this Pro-
 vince, towards the Sea, where it hath a very
 commodious Haven belonging to it. 2. *La*
Serenia, a Town situate on the banks of *Ca-*
quimbo, a pleasant River a little above its in-
 flux into the Sea, built by *Baldovia*, in the year
 1544: The Countrey about it very rich in
 Mines

Mines of Gold; and the Town it self so well
 garrison'd for fear of the Natives, that when
 the English, under Sir *Francis Drake*, about
 four-score years since, attempted the gaining
 of the place, they found but service of it, being
 stoutly resisted and beaten back again to the
 ships, by a salley of no less than three hundred
 good Horse and two hundred Foot. 3. *St. Jago*,
 the principall Town of the Province, a Bay
 shops Sea, and the ordinary residence of the
 Governor, lying on the banks of the River
Placerama, in the thirty fourth degree of
 Southern latitude, fifteen leagues distant from
 the South Sea, at which it hath a very com-
 modious and much frequented Haven, which
 they call *Valparaiso*, and where the English
 met with better fortune, as hath been said al-
 ready in the report of Sir *Francis Drake's* voy-
 age. 4. *La Conception*, a strong Town, seated
 on the Bay called *Punta*, threescore or seventy
 leagues distant from *St. Jago* towards the
 South, a place not a little fortified both by
 Nature and Art, having the Bay and a certain
 ridge of high Mountains beginning it almost
 round about; and where it is otherwise ac-
 cessible, a Castle and certain Bulwarks with
 Ordnance, besides a Garrison of five hundred
 Souldiers at least continually in it: and all

little
 canes,
 bouts,
 almost
 place,
 shore,
 Mari
 all so
 La C
 Confir
 afore
 Mine
 ing.
 son
 (au
 fong
 Span
 othe
 with
 men
 rica
 part
 and
 so n
 Bal
 dall
 the
 Po

little enough to defend it against the *Araucanes*, their deadly Enemies, who live thereabouts, and are ever and anon making incursions almost up to the walls of it. Over against the place, in *Atara del Zur*, but very neer the shore, there lyeth a certain Island called *St. Maries*, exceedingly plentiful in Swine and all sorts of Poultry, which the Garrison of *La Concepcion* make good use of. 5. *Des Confines*: this is a Frontier Town, built by the aforesaid *Baldivia*, for defence of the rich Mines of gold at *Ongol*, a place neer adjoining. 6. *La Imperiale*, another strong Garrison of this place on the banks of the River *Cauten*, neer to which that great battle was fought, where *Baldivia*, with divers other Spaniards, was taken prisoner, who were no otherwise overcome, but by being overwearied with killing of their Enemies, and by that means not able to make their retreat. 7. *Pillrica*, another Colonie of the Spaniards in these parts, sixteen leagues distant from *Imperial*, and twenty five from the Sea. 8. *Baldoid*, so named from the Commander himself *Pedro Baldivia*, who built it in the Valley of *Caladallanquen*, two or three leagues distant from the Sea, where it hath a good and capacious Port; but neerer to it the best Mines of *Pow.*

so

so rich, that 'tis said, they yeelded *Baldivia* every day, so long as he could enjoy them, twenty five thousand Crowns for every man that wrought in them. 9. *Oforno*, a Town lying on the Bay of *Chiloe* in a barren Soile outwardly, but otherwise neither less rich, nor less populous than *Baldivia* it self. These three towns, viz. *Baldivia*, *Imperiale*, and *Oforno* were in the years 1596, 1599, 1604, surprized by the *Araucanes*, and other savages confederate with them, sack'd and burnt; and though the Spaniards be said to have recovered and garrisoned some of them with fresh Souldiers, yet how long they were able to hold them, or whether they be Masters of them at this day I cannot say. There is likewise, 10. *Castro* the most Southerly Town of the whole Province; built in a certain Island within the Bay of *Chiloe*; and lastly towards *Paraguay* and *Rio de la Plata* there are the Towns *Aldozas*, and *St. Juan de la Frontera*; but they lye on the other side of the *Andes*, forty leagues distant from any of these we speak of, and perhaps more, and not above one hundred from *Buenos Ayres*, and the Atlantick Ocean.

11. *Magellanica*, the other part of this Province is bounded Northward with *Chile* above-

said,

said, a
Plata;
called
Zur on
tick O
border
about
viz. f
what r
west p
South
inform
South
Pyran
trie t
beare
Porte
Sea,
gellan
large
ther
disco
son o
to be
the c
rem
cesy
dis,
119

said, and some parts of the Countrie della
 Plata; on the South with the narrow Sea
 called *Magellans Streits*, having *Mare del*
Zur on the West; and on the East the Atlan-
 tick Ocean. It contains in length, from the
 borders of *Chile* to the mouth of the Streits,
 about one hundred leagues; and in breadth,
viz. from the North to the South Sea, some-
 what more, *viz.* towards *Chile* and the North-
 west parts of it; for towards the South and
 South-west it streightens still more and more;
 insomuch, that they which resemble the
 Southern part of *America* to the form of a
 Pyramis reversed, makes this part of the Coun-
 trie to be the spire or top of the Pyramis. It
 beareth the name of *Ferdinand Magellan*, a
 Portughese, who first discovered that narrow
 Sea, so famously known by the name of *Ma-*
gellans Streits, upon which it lyeth. It is a
 large Countrie and supposed not to be altoge-
 ther barren of Metals; but as yet no great
 discoverie hath been made of it: partly by rea-
 son of the excessive cold to which 'tis thought
 to be subject: and partly perhaps by reason of
 the difficulty of the enterprize, it being so far
 remote, and very hardly passable in many pla-
 ces, by reason of the huge mountains the *An-*
des, which barre it, as it were, against all ad-
 venturers:

venturers : but chiefly by reason of the stout-
 ness and untameableness of the *Araucanes* and
 other Natives of *Chile*, through whose Coun-
 trie the march lyeth, and who must first be
 conquered. So that very little can be said
 more of this Countrey, than only to name the
 Ports and places upon the Sea coasts, at which
 the Spaniards, and likewise some other Nati-
 ons at several times have touched : the chief
 whereof upon the South Sea are first *Cabo de
 las Islas*, a Promontorie or Forland twenty
 six leagues distant from that of *St. Felix* on
 the confines of *Chile*. 2. *Puerto de San. Ste-
 phano*, fiftie leagues from that, towards the
 South. 3. *La Valle de Nuestra Señora*, or
Our Ladies Dale, a large and secure Bay, eigh-
 teen leagues Southward of *St. Stephens*.
 4. *La Punta Delgada*. 5. *Puerto de los Reyes*.
 6. *Ancon Sin Salida*. All of them South-
 ward towards the Streits. Then is there al-
 most at the opening of the Streits *Cabo de la
 Victoria*, *Cabo Dastada*, and some others. Up-
 on the North Sea, and up towards *Rio de la
 Plata*, the chief places observed are first *Rio de
 la Plata*, and the Cape which they call *de los
 Rios*, about thirty leagues distant from the
 Streits mouth. 7. The Bay of *San Julian*,
 forty leagues Northward of that. 8. *El
 Puerto*

Puerto Descada. 4. *Puerto de las Leñas.*
 The Bay of *Anegada*: All of them good
 and capacious Havens for the security of
 shipping upon these coasts, and lying at a di-
 stance of thirty or forty leagues one from
 another, up towards *Rio de la Plata*, and the
 Countrey of *Paraguay*, of which we are next
 to speak.

As for the *Streits* themselves, so much spo-
 ken of, and likewise so necessary to be known
 by those who frequent these parts of the
 World, they are a narrow Sea or Frith, by
 which the Atlantick Ocean, or rather some
 parts of it, doth fall into *Mare del Zur*, or
 the South Sea. The passage is long, running, as
 is commonly supposed, well nigh one hun-
 dred leagues together, almost in a parallel
 line, or in the same degree of latitude from
 one end to the other: and likewise extremely
 difficult, by reason of the many windings and
 turnings of the Sea, which force them to be
 ever and anon skirting of their course; and a
 mountainous high Countrey on both sides of
 it, from whence it is almost continually beaten
 with storms, both dangerous and terrible. They
 were first discovered by *Ferdinand Magellan*,
 by Nation a Portuguese, but in the Service of
 the King of Spain; and by him named *Estreito*
Magellans

Magellans Straits: who, although himself liv-
 not to return into *Spain*, being slain in the co-
 quest of the *Molucca* Islands, yet his comp-
 nions did, in the ship called *Vittoria*; from
 whence the *Cape de la Vittoria* abovesaid too
 its name. They lye at the mouth or entrance
 of them by the *Atlantick Ocean*, in the fifth
 two degrees of Southern latitude, and have
 not above fifty three and some minutes at the
Exit, or opening into the *South-Sea*. There
 is likewise since this, and of but late times, viz.
 about the year 1615 another *Strait* discovered
 by the Dutch, and called from the Discoverer
Pretum, or the *Strait of St. Maire*, four or
 five degrees more to the Southward than those
 of *Magellan*, and supposed to be a much ea-
 sier and safer passage. The intention was, by
 the discovery of these *Straits*, to have found
 a shorter way to the *East-Indies*, and the
Kingdoms of Cathay and China, than that
 which was then only used, viz. by the *Cape*
de Buena Esperanza, and the *Coast of Africa*,
 and so they doe; but by reason of the great
 difficultie and uncertaintie of the passage,
 suppose neither the one nor the other is much
 frequented: the *Spaniards* for the most part
 terring themselves of their *American Ports*
 upon the *South-Sea*, from whence they make
 their

their
 other
 and the
 trade
 of *Go-*
bra and
 their
 I.
 southe
 fore
 Ameri
 del
 ince o
 strais
 of the
 which
 or con
 but
 ward an
 of *An*
 as fa
 mecth
 their

their voyages and returns to and from the other Indies, and from thence home to Spain; and the English with other Nations of Europe, trading still by the Coast of *Africk* and Cape of *Good Hope*, or else by the way of *Alexandria* and the Persian Gulf, as heretofore.

CHAP. XV.

Of Paraguay, or Rio de la Plata.

WE have seen in *Magellanica* the furthest, that is, the most southerly part of the New World, and before it in order all the Western Coasts of *America* that lye either upon or towards *Madagaskar*, viz. from *Panama*, the first Province of this Southern part down as far as the *Streits*. We are now to return and take a view of the Eastern Coasts, and those Countries which lye upon the Atlantick Ocean, steering our course henceforth Northward, not directly, but as the Coast leads us for a while Eastward and by North: for as much as the Land of *America* from the Streits of *Magellan* as far as *Brasil*, and almost to the Equator, smeth out with a long Easterly point, little

less than three thousand leagues together. The
 first Province we meet with on this side, next
 to *Magellanica*, is the Countrie of *Paraguay*,
 oftentimes called *Rio de la Plata*, from the
 name of an huge River, which runneth for the
 most part, through the midst of it. It is bor-
 dered, as we said, to the South and towards
 the Streits with *Magellanica*; on the East with
 the Atlantick Ocean; more Northward, or
 to the North-East, it hath *Brasil*; and on the
 West these undiscovered Countries of the Pro-
 vince of *Chile*, of which we spake. The Coun-
 trie on both sides the River is reported to be a
 very lussy and fruitfull Soil, bearing besides
 those which are proper and Native, all sorts of
 European Fruits and Grain in great aboun-
 dance, with Sugar Canes, as many, great, and
 good, as any other Province of the New
 World. Nor is it excelled by any other Coun-
 trie for good pasturege and great herds of
 Cattel; Sheep, Swine; In particular Horses
 are said to have so multiplied here, that o-
 thirty Mares, and about six or seven Stallions
 which the Spaniards left there, in the space of
 forty yeers the whole Countrie thereabout
 towards the South, was filled with the Breed
 of them, running wild in great companies to-
 gether, through all the Woods and Forests

of the
 service
 likewise
 some
 good
 but of
 Brasil;
 wages
 said di
 of the
 out of
 hands
 falling
 thirty
 in East
 thirty
 to The
 ded
 are: 27
 210/25
 210/25
 that p
 self nor
 ny lea
 bread
 est not
 by son
 them
 0

of the Country, and of excellent mettels and service if they could be tamed. It affordeth likewise great flocks of wild Dees and Stags, some Lions, Tygers, &c. nor is it without good Mines, some both of Gold and Silver; but chiefly, as to what is yet discovered, of Brasse, and Iron, and the People altogether Savage. The River *de la Plata*, which, as we said divideth the Country, is one of the largest of the whole World, rising, as 'tis supposed, out of the Lake called *de las Narayes*, three hundred leagues or more within land, and falling into the Atlantick, or North Sea, in thirty four degrees of Southern latitude, with an Estuary or Mouth of thirty, or two and thirty leagues over.

The whole Country is usually subdivided into three inferiour Provinces, which are: 1. *Rio de la Plata* properly so called. 2. *Extremum*. 3. *La Cruz de Sierra*.

Rio de la Plata, properly so called, is that part of the Country, which extendeth in itself on both sides of the River, in length many leagues together, but not answerable in breadth; and containeth these Towns of chiefest note and importance, viz. 1. *Buenos Ayres*, by some called *La Trinidad*, on the Southern banks of the River *de la Plata*, forty

four leagues, they say, from the Mouth of it. It is seated commodiously at the foot of a little Mountain, and fortified with a Mud-wall, a little Castle, and some pieces of Ordinance. 2. *Sta. Fe*, in English *St. Faith*, fifty leagues above *Buenos Ayres*, upon the same River and a richer place, chiefly by reason of their cloath, of which there is here one of the greatest Manufactures of all these parts of *Pera*. 3. *Nuestra Señora dela Assumption*, commonly called *Assumption* only, lying yet higher up the River almost one hundred leagues, a well built, and well frequented Town, said to be inhabited by two hundred Families at least of naturall Spaniards, besides *Mestizos*, as they call them, which are the breed of Spaniards by the American People, men or women; and *Mulattos*, which are likewise their Race, but begotten upon Negroes: of both which there are reckoned to be here some Thousands. 4. *La Ciudad Real*, or more commonly called *Ontiveros*, fourscore leagues Northward from *Assumption*, seated on the banks of the River *Parana* in a fruitfull Soil, as the Country generally is about all these places, but the Aire here not so healthfull. 5. *St. Amos*, upon the same River. 6. *St. Salvador*.

8. Westward

3. Westward of *la Plata*, lyeth the Country of *Tucuman*, extending it self as far as the borders of *Chile*; a Country not yet well discovered either to the North or the South. That part of it which lyeth toward *Chile* is well manured and husbanded, and likewise very fruitfull: But that towards *Magellanica* neither the one nor the other, remaining altogether untilld and barren. The chief Towns and places of note are, 1. *St. Jago de Esseca*, the principall Town of the Province and a Bishops Sea, seated upon the River *Esseca*, one hundred and fourscore leagues distant from *Buenos Ayres*. 2. *St Michael de Tucuman*, seated at the foot of an huge rocky Mountain, but otherwise in a Soil the fruitfullest and best, both for Corn and Pasturage, of all this Country, twenty eight leagues distant from *St. Jago*. 3. *Talavera*, or *Nuestra Señora de Talavera*, as the Spaniards call it, situate upon the banks of *Salado*, in a good Soil, and inhabited by an industrious People, grown exceeding rich and wealthy, cheifly by their Manufactures of Cotton-wooll, whereof they have great plenty, and by which they drive a Trade as farre as the Mines at *Potosi*, and other parts of *Pernu*. 3. *Cordoba* another rich Town of this Province and of great trade, as lying

at an equall distance, viz. of fifty leagues, both from *Sa. Fe*, as they call it, or *St. Faiths*, in the Province of *La Plata* above said, & from *St. Juan de la Frontera* in the Country of *Chile*, and almost in the road way from *Potosi* and those parts of *Peru* to *Buenos Ayres* and the North Sea. There are likewise the Townes 5. *Chocinoca*. 6. *Sococho*. 7. *Calebinda*. 8. *Morata* and others; but belonging for the most part to the redacted Natives.

4. *Sa. Cruz de Sierra* is a little Terricory (at least in comparision to some others) lying towards *Peru*, and reckoned by some for part of the Province of *Peru*. It lyeth betwixt the two great Rivers of *Paraguay* and *Guapay*, one hundred leagues distant, as 'tis said, from *Charcas*, to which yet, in some causes it is subordinate. The Soil of the Country abundantly fertill in all sorts of American Fruits, besides good plenty both of Wheat and Maiz, scanty of nothing usefull for mans life, unless it be fresh water in some places. The chief Towns of it are, 1. *Sa. Cruz*, situate at the foot of a great Mountain or Hill, but opening upon a large Plain, whose thirsty dryness is well refreshed by a certain Brook or Torrent, which issueth out of a neighbouring Mountain, at a few leagues distance from the Town maketh a pretty

a pretty Lake which supplyeth the Country thereabouts, both with fresh water and fish good plenty 2. *Barraba*, a Town supposed to be not above threefore leagues distant from *Potozi*. 3. *Nova-Rio*, once a Colony of Spaniards, but sacked and spoiled by the Savages of these parts, about the yeare 1548, and the first Discoverer of the Country, namely *Nunno de Chaves* treacherously murdered by a Native; since which time, 'tis said to have been deserted.

CHAP. XVI.

Of *Brasil*.

1. **N** Otthward of *Paraguay*, or *Rio de la Plata*, lyeth the Country of *Brasil*, a large Province of this Easterly part of *America*, and bounded to the East with *Mare del-Nort*, or the Atlantick Ocean; on the West with the *Andes*. On the North it hath the great River *Maragnon*, which divides it from *Guiana*, and on the South *Paraguay*. It containes in length measuring by the Sea coast from North to South, two hundred leagues and more, but in breadth, that is from the *Andes*

at an equall distance, viz. of fifty leagues, both from *Sta. Fe*, as they call it, or *St. Faiths*, in the Province of *La Plata* above said, & from *St. Juan de la Frontera* in the Country of *Chile*; and almost in the road way from *Potosi* and those parts of *Peru* to *Buenos Ayres* and the North Sea. There are likewise the Townes 5. *Chirinoca*. 6. *Sacocha*. 7. *Calebinda*: 8. *Morata* and others; but belonging for the most part to the redacted Natives.

4. *Sta. Cruz de Sierra* is a little Terricory (at least in comparison to some others) lying towards *Peru*, and reckoned by some for part of the Province of *Peru*. It lyeth betwixt the two great Rivers of *Paraguay* and *Gnapay*, one hundred leagues distant, as 'tis said, from *Charcas*, to which yet, in some canes it is subordinate. The Soil of the Country abundantly fertill in all sorts of American Fruits, besides good plenty both of Wheat and *Miz*, scanty of nothing usefull for mans life, unless it be fresh water in some places. The chief Towns of it are, 1. *Sta. Cruz*, situate at the foot of a great Mountain or Hill, but opening upon a large Plain, whose thirsty dryness is well refreshed by a certain Brook or Torrent, which issueth out of a neighbouring Mountain, a few leagues distant from the Town maketh a pretty

a pretty Lake which supplyeth the Country thereabouts, both with fresh water and fish good plenty 2. *Barruta*, a Town supposed to be not above three score leagues distant from *Patoxi*. 3. *Nova-Rio*, once a Colony of Spaniards, but sacked and spoiled by the Savages of these parts, about the year 1548, and the first Discoverer of the Country, namely *Nunno de Chaves* treacherously murdered by a Native; since which time, 'tis said to have been deserted.

CHAP. XVI.

Of *Brasil*.

1. **N**orthward of *Paraguay*, or *Rio de la Plata*, lyeth the Country of *Brasil*, a large Province of this Easterly part of *America*, and bounded to the East with *Mare del Nord*, or the Atlantick Ocean; on the West with the *Andes*. On the North it hath the great River *Maragnon*, which divides it from *Guiana*, and on the South *Paraguay*. It contains in length measuring by the Sea coast from North to South, two hundred leagues and more, but in breadth, that is from the *Andes*

des to the Sea, scarce half so much : of which likewise but a small portion is yet discovered, and less possessed ; The Portughezes, who are Masters of the Country, holding only some few places towards the Sea, with so much of the uplands as the Inhabitants thereabouts can use, leaving all the rest to the Natives, or such as will adventure further for it. The Country is in some parts mountainous, and well set with Forests and huge Woods, yet generally of a Champaign and low ground, commodiously distinguished and watered with good Rivers. The Aire for the most part sound and healthfull, being said to be very much cleered by certain fresh windes from the Southward, which they have almost continually all along upon the coasts. The Soil would be admirably fruitfull, were it not for overmuch rain ; to which, especially in some parts the Country is subject. Nevertheless it is wonderfully plentiful, and aboundeth with sugar-Canes, more than any other part of *America* beside ; the Portughezes here having their *Jugonies*, as they call them, or sugar-Mills, up and down in all parts of the Country, with many thousands of Slaves working in them, which are brought them yearly out of *Guiny*, *Congo*, and other parts of *Africk*. And 'tis a merchandise

handi
Portug
near
dred
every
is som
wise
they c
ed bo
of Cl
e of
milies
Arme
wage
overf
the y
stedly
Afric
stran
any o
seen
s. &
and b
eatin
mity
dest
the
who
in th

handise doubtless of huge profit to them; the Portugheles being supposed to transport one year with another only out of *Brasil* a hundred and fifty thousand *Arrobas* of fine sugar, every *Arroba* containing twenty five Bushels, as some say, of English measure. There is likewise great quantity of that red wood, which they commonly call *Brasil* wood, so much used both in *England* and other parts for dying of Cloath. The Trees of this wood are said to be of such incredible bigness, that whole Families of the Natives live upon or within an Arme of them, and they are a principall Stowage and refuge for them, when the Land is overflowed with waters, as at some times of the year it happens to be, and that unexpectedly on the sudden. This Country is another *Africk*, abounding with variety of many strange and prodigious creatures, more than any other part of the *New-World*, as may be seen in Authors, especially *Laetlib. 15. cap. 5. &c.* and the Natives generally no less savage and barbarous, going for the most part naked, eating Mans-flesh; the men cruel to extremity, and the women as wanton and immodest: both of them, especially more towards the *Andes*, hairy all over like brut beasts, from whom they seem but little to differ, save only in shape.

The

The Country is not as yet divided into Provinces or such nationall districts, as the other parts of *America* generally are, although there be found among them as many several sorts of People, and of different languages, as in any other Country, but into certain Prefectures or lesser Governments, which the Portugheſes have erected and ſetled, only for the command and better ſecuring of thoſe parts which themſelves hold in the Country. They lie all of them towards the Sea-coaſt, and are reckoned to be about thirteen in number, viz.

1. The Prefecture of *St. Vincent*, bordering on *Rio de la Plata*, and inhabited by the moſt civil People of *Braſil*, where the Portugheſes have theſe Towns of note, viz. *Los Santos* at the bottom of a Bay, or huge Arme of the Sea, with an Haven belonging to it capable of ſhips of good burthen. It lyeth two or three leagues diſtant from the main Ocean, and was taken and held by the Engliſh under Sir *Thomas Cavendiſh*, ſome two months together in the yeare 1521, but is now better fortified with a Wall, two ſtrong Caſtles, and ſome pieces of Ordinance. 2. *St. Vincent*, not above four miles diſtant from *Los Santos*, and better built, only it hath not the benefit of ſuch a good

Good Haven. 3. *Nauze*. 4. *Canabá*; all of them
 southward of *St. Vincent*, at some leagues
 distance. 5. *St. Paul*, situate upon the top of
 a Mountain or little Hill, having a very curi-
 ous prospect into the open fields, both to-
 wards the East, North and South; westward
 overlooketh a little Wood or Forest, and
 is neighboured, they say, with very rich Mines
 of Gold in the Mountaines *Pernapiatába*, six
 or seven leagues distant. 6. *St. Philip*, on the
 banks of *Imambis*, a fair River of this Coun-
 try.

The Prefecture of *Rio de Janeiro*, a district
 of this Country once held by the French, but
 taken from them by the Portuguese in the
 year 1558, and all the French put to the
 sword. It hath these Towns, 1. *Colignia*, so
 named from that famous *Hugonot* *Gaspar Co-*
ligni Admiral of France, by whose assistance
 and encouragement chiefly it had been peo-
 pled by the French; being seated on a Bay of
 the River *Janairo*. 2. *St. Sebastião*, a Town
 built by the Portuguese at the Mouth of the
 said Bay, and fortified with four strong Bul-
 works. 3. *Angá de los Reyes*, twelve leagues
 distant from *St. Sebastião* westward, beside
 some Barroughs of the Natives very populous,
 but neither strong nor fortified.

The

The Prefecture *del Spirito Santo*, one of the
 most fertile Prefectships of all *Brasil*, plentifully
 stored with Cotton-wool, watered with
 excellent Rivers, especially that which they
 call *Parayba*, of a large stream, and full of
 good fish. The Prefecture it self is not very
 large, as having one only Town of note in
 inhabited by the Portughezes, called likewise
Spirito Santo; but it hath two hundred Families
 at least in it, and a very safe and commodious
 Haven belonging to it three or four
 leagues distant from the Sea.

The Prefecture of *Puerto Seguro*, five
 leagues more to the North of *Spirito Santo*,
 having these Towns, viz. 1. *Puerto Seguro*
 self, seated, as it were, upon a Rock or Cliff
 towards the Sea side, where it commands the
 Haven, and contains in it about two hundred
 Families of Portughezes. 2. *Sta. Cruz*, three
 leagues distant from *Puerto Seguro*. 3. *Ama-
 ro*, or *St. Omari* in *America*, once a rich Town
 and well Traded by reason of the abundance
 of sugar-Canes which the Countrey afforded
 but since deserted, as some say, by the Portu-
 ghezes, not able to maintain the place and their
 trading against the Savages thereabouts, who
 having kild & likewise eaten most of the slaves
 at their sugar-Farms in the Countrey, seemed

threaten no less to themselves.

The Prefecture *Das Ilhas*, as the Portuguese call it, either from certain Islands which before it, or from the principall Town called *Ilha* seated upon a convenient Bay or some of the Sea, about thirty leagues distant from *Puerto Seguro* to the North. There are to be one hundred or one hundred and fifty Families of Portuguese in it; and a few leagues from it more within land, a Lake of ten or twelve leagues in compass, well stored with good Fish, especially those called *Manan*, a dainty Fish for meat, as hath been said, and so big, that, as *Lust* reporteth, some of them here are found of a thousand or eleven hundred pound weight, and sometimes more. The Portuguese hereabouts would quickly grow rich by the abundance of sugar-Canes and good Cattel which the Countreis breeds, but for the *Guaymari*, as they call them, which are a sort of Savages of Gigantine size and stature, as they say, much more fierce and cruel than others, and which doe very much molest their quarters.

The Prefecture of *Todas las Santos*, in English *All Saints*, lying upon a goodly and spacious Bay called likewise the Bay of *All Saints*, thirty leagues distant from *Das Ilhas* above-said;

said, and is a very convenient and safe Harbour for shipping in those Seas, which are sometimes not a little stormy and tempestuous. Its place very well fortified, and especially memorable for a brave exploit performed there by *Peter Heyns* a Dutch man, and Admiral of a squadron of *State* ships in the year 1634, who, as is said, only with his own ship (the rest of his company not being able to follow him) thrust into a Fleet of Spaniards, of no less than twenty six sail, that lay at Anchor in the Bay, and having sunk their Admiral, took the rest at Mercy, and carried them out with him in spite of some other ships that lay there, and the Castle, and above forty pieces of Ordnance planted on the shore. Their chief Towns are *S. Salvador*, built on a little hill on the North side of the Bay. It is a walled Town, and fortified with no less than three strong Castles, yet surprized by the Dutch in the year 1624, but lost again the next year following, as they would make us believe, to the treachery of some of their own compaignie.

The Prefecture of *Fernambuck*, held to be one of the richest and best of the Country both for Tobacco, Sugar, and great quantities of Brazil wood, which is yearly brought from thence.

ence. Their chief Towns are first *Olinda*, the
biggest Town and best Peopled of all *Brasil*,
containing by estimation above two thousand
persons Portuguese, not reckoning Ecclesi-
asticks and Religious men into the number; of
which yet there are many. It lyeth toward
the Sea side; but upon such an uneven ground
that it is not apt to be fortified otherwise then
it is by Nature; neither is the Haven so great
as a Town of such Trading would require;
yet is it fortified with a Castle and some pieces
of Ordinance. The Castle and a great part of
the suburbs along the Coast, were surprized
by the English under Captain *Lancaster* in the
year 1595, and a rich prize of the chief Com-
modities of *Brasil* and *India* brought from
thence; and in the year 1630 the Town it self,
Castle and all taken by the Dutch, who there-
upon became Masters of this whole Prefecture,
which they held for many years together a-
gainst the Spaniards, but have since lost it
wholly again to the Portuguese. 2. *Garasa*,
five leagues distant from *Olinda*, a small Town
but holding likewise some little Commerce
with the Sea, by the benefit of a River upon
which it standeth. 3. *Amara de Brasil*.
4. *Sao. Lorenzo*, and some other Vil-
lages.

The

The Prefecture of *Tamara*, so called from a little Island lying before it, and part of its Precinct. It is counted the first, that is, the most ancient Prefecture of *Brasil*, having otherwise nothing in it that is very considerable, save only a good Haven or Port, with a Castle, for the security and command of it held to be impregnable.

The Prefecture of *Parayba*, so called from the chief Town of the Province, upon the banks of the River *S. Domingo*, and at the bottom of a Bay or Arm of the Sea, by which ships of good burthen come up even close to the Town. It is inhabited by above five hundred Portuguese, a walled Town and likewise fortified with a Castle upon *Cape Delo*, neighbouring to it.

The Prefecture of *Rio Grande*, on the great River, a small Precinct on the South-side of *Rio Grande*, where it falls into the Sea. It was once possessed by the French about the year 1597, who were ousted by the Portuguese, and the place fortified both against them and the Savages, with a Castle, which the Dutch in the year 1631 found an impregnable piece, and too hard for them: and besides this there is not much in the whole Prefecture that seems memorable.

The

The Prefecture of *Siara*, in which they seem to have as little, that is, no Towns of note, only a Castle and some few houses for those that attend the gathering of Cotton-wooll, some Chrystal, and other precious stones, which the Countrie is said to afford.

The Prefecture of *Maragnon*: This is an Island lying at the mouth of the great River *Maragnon* in the furthest parts of *Brasil* Northward. The soil exceedingly fruitfull if there were any body to manure and husband it, affording plenty of *Maiz* naturally, and a certain other root which the Savages call *Ma-riot*, and use likewise for Bread: great store of Cotton-wooll, Sugar-Canes, Saffron, with the best sort of Tobacco; not without some Balme and Amber, watered with many fresh Rivers and Springs; well wooded both for Timber and Fuel; and the Aire so exceedingly temperate and agreeable, that no People in the World are generally longer liv'd than those of this Island; being otherwise very strong and able of body, healthfull of constitution, never bald, and the Women so fruitfull and lusty, that they are said to beare Children (many of them) at seventy or eighty years of age. The Men very curious in the Feather works of *America*, and not a little indu-

strious in the Manufactures of Cotton-wooll. It lyeth some few degrees Southward of the Equator, and containeth not in the compasse of the whole Island above fifty or threescore leagues at most. The French were once Masters of it, *viz.* about the year 1612, when they built the strong Fort called *St. Lewis*, upon the principall Bay or Port belonging to the Island, and planted twenty two good pieces of Ordinance upon it, and by the pains of some Religious men among them, began to doe much good upon the Natives, by reducing them to Civility and good Manners, and instructing them in the true knowledge of God and of Christian Religion: But were soon after, *viz.* in the year 1614, driven out by the Portugheze, under the command of *Hierons de Albuquerque*, who, for the security of the Island against them, and the Natives that took their part, built those other two Forts which are called *St. Maries* and *St. Francis*, and likewise two Towns more within the Island, which he founded and Peopled, naming the one of them *St. Andrew*, which lyeth towards the North; and the other *St. James*, towards the South.

And lastly the Prefecture of *Para*. This is the most Northerly part of *Brasil*, bordering upon
Guiana,

Guba
 runn
 a con
 the P
 well
 the P
 It is
 lext
 on (I
 to it,
 the C
 whic
 plant

I.
 Com
 to be
 princ
 is sat
 part
 East
 Nor
 TIO

Galana, so called from the River *Para*, which runneth through the midst of it, upon which, in a convenient place, and upon raised ground, the Portuguese have built a very strong Castle, well walled on all sides, save only towards the River, where it is planted with Ordnance. It is built in a Quadrangular form, and hath at least 300 persons of the Portuguese Nation (beside the Garrison Soldiers) belonging to it, who have all employment enough about the Cotton-wooll, Sugar-Canes, and Tobacco, which the Countrey is said to afford in good plenty.

CHAP. XVII.

Of the Countrey of Guiana.

I. **N**Ext to *Brasil*, towards the North, lieth the pleasant and fruitfull Countrey of *Guiana*, supposed, not improbably, to be so called from the River *Wia*, one of the principall Rivers of the Province; which yet is said to have more and fairer than any other part of *America* beside. It is bounded on the East with the Atlantick Ocean, or *Mare del Nord*; on the West with the *Andes*, or rather

ther some undiscovered Mountainous Countries which lye between the one and the other : On the North it hath the great River *Orenoque* ; and on the South that of the *Amazons*, or *Orellana*. The Countrie lyeth on both sides of the Equator, extended from the fourth degree of Southern latitude, to the eighth degree of Northern : yet enjoyeth a temperate and good Aire, not oppressed with any excessive heat ; which is chiefly attributed to the *Brises* or Easterly windes, almost perpetually every day about noon blowing upon it. Towards the Sea side it is for the most part a flat and level Countrie ; in the more Inland parts Mountainous and swelled with Hills ; but in all generally of such a rich and fertil Soil, that for Fruits, or any outward Commodities of the Earth, it yeelds not to any other Province of the New-World, but rather farre excelleth the most ; having, as it were a continual Summer, without Winter or Autumn, the Trees never unclothed or made bare, Fruits alwaies ripe, or growing to maturity, the Meadows and Pastures alwaies Verdant and green : and, as we said, so excellently well watered with Rivers, that no Countrie in the World seems comparable to it in this respect : And by the principall of them it is divided into four inferior

riour
las e
perl
Islan

2.

Amaz
which
na, of
ing w
those
love
that i
are of
of and
more
full a
cover
Quito
and el
failed
down
and fa
people
places
and in
the ba
likewi
yet, th

riour or lesser Provinces, which are, 1. *Rio de las Amazonas*. 2. *Wiapoco*, or *Guiana*, properly so called. 3. *Orenoque* : And 4. the Islands of *Guiana*.

2. *Rio de las Amazonas*, or the Countrie of Amazons, containeth all that part of *Guiana* which lyeth on both sides of the River *Orellana*, of a rich and good Soil generally, abounding with all sorts of Fruits, and especially with those which the Americans call *Totack*, and love extremely, out of an opinion, they say, that it excites them to Venery, whereunto they are of themselves but too much inclined ; and of another which they call *Pita*, of a taste farre more delicious and pleasing, and not so hurtfull as the other. The Countrie was first discovered by *Francisco Orellana* a Spaniard from *Quito*, but it was only by the River *Orellana* : and though he be credibly reported to have sailed no less than eighteen hundred leagues down the Stream, and to have discovered a rich and fair Countrie on both sides the River, well peopled with Natives, and giving in divers places no small arguments of greater wealth and riches more within Land ; yet such was the bad success of his second endeavors, and likewise of those that followed him, that, as yet, there seems no further report to be given,

at least not of any thing special, concerning this part of the Countrey.

3. *Wiapoco*, or *Guiana*, properly so called, taketh up the middle part of this Province, being divided, as the other, almost into two equall parts, by the River *Wiapoco*, which runs through the midst of it. The Countrey on both sides of the River very rich and fertile, and so naturally apt, both for sugar-Canes, Cotton-wooll, and Tobacco, that they are said to grow here (all of them very good) without planting or any Art of Husbandry. In this Countrey is likewise the famous *Dorada*, as the Spaniards call it, or Citie of Gold (if it could be found) with the reports and hopes whereof some of our own Nation seem to have been not a little possessed, as well as the Spaniards. Nor can I much blame them; for if the stories of it had prov'd true, it must have been one of the goodliest and fairest Cities of the World (not to speak of the wealth.) *Diego d'Ordaz*, the Spaniard who first brought news of it to his Countymen, being said to have travelled one whole day and half another in it, before he could arrive at the Kings Palace; which yet must be supposed to have stood but in the midst of the Citie. But for ought appears, if the endeavors of future times effect nothing

nothing more in the discovery of it than former have done, it must pass for the Metropolis of *Utopia* still, as I think most men take it to be. Places of less Magnificence, but more Certainty are first *Caripo* : This was once a Colony of English settled there by Captain *Robert Hartcourt*, in the year 1608, upon the banks of *Wiapoco*, and not farre from the mouth of it ; being a place, by advantage of a Rock, which it hath on the one side of it, of good strength and very difficult access, the Aire about it sound, and said to be very agreeable to English bodies. 2. *Gomaribo*, a Colony formerly of the Dutch, on the North-west side of the Bay of *Wiapoco*, but since deserted by them. 3. *Moyemon*, 4. *Crewinay*, both of them Towns of the Natives, not farre distant from the other.

4. *Orénoque*, or the third division of this Province, comprehendeth the most Northerly parts of *Gaiana*, lying upon or towards the banks of this famous River. A Countrie likewise reported to be very rich, and comparable to *Peru* it self for hidden Treasure, which, they say, is not yet discovered, only for want of diligent and industrious searching. The places in it already known are only 1. *Cometaba*, as they call it, which seems to be some Town

of the Natives, lying a few leagues distant from the *Orenoque* towards the South. 2. *Mo-requito*, a known Port or Haven Town upon a branch of the *Orenoque*, much frequented and of great use to the English, when they discovered those coasts. 3. *Wenicapora*: And lastly *St. Thome*, the only Town which the Spaniards hold upon this part of the Continent, situate upon the principall Channel of the *Orenoque*, and consisting of two hundred Families or thereabouts. It is now a fortified place; and was taken by Sir *Walter Raleigh* in that unfortunate Action of 1617, for which the year following (though by vertue of an old attainder, as some say) he lost his head.

5. The Islands that belong, and are commonly reckoned as parts of *Guiana*, are either such as lye scattered about the shore of the Province, or such as are found at the mouth, and sometimes farre within the Channel of those great Rivers which empty themselves at several parts out of this Countrey into the Sea, viz. *Orenoque*, *Wiaporo*, *Rio de las Amazonas*, &c. There are many of them, but of any great name or esteem only two, viz. *Trinidad* and *Tabago*.

Trinidad lyeth at the mouth of the River *Orenoque*, over against the Countrey of *Paria*,
from

from which it is separated by a Fryth or narrow Sea, which *Columbus* at his first discovery of it, and from the difficulty of the passage, (by reason of some lesser Islands scattered up and down in the Channel, and through which the Sea breaks with a great deal of force) called *Boca del Drago*, or the Dragons mouth. It lyeth betwixt the ninth and tenth degrees of Northern latitude, accounted to be in length about 24 or twenty five leagues, and about eighteen in breadth, of a cloudy and less pleasant aire, yet the Soil good, and abundantly well stored with all Commodities of the natural growth of *America*, viz. *Maiz*, Sugar-Canes, Cotton-wooll, and the best sort of Tobacco, good quantity of Fruits also, and of Cattel; some veins of gold, and of a kinde of Pitch, which they digge out of a Mine, such plenty, that as many ships as could come, might lade themselves with it; and is said to be good in all other respects, except only that it will not endure the Sun. The chief Town of this Island is called *St. Joseph*, situate on the banks of a little River, which they call *Cagone*, on the South side of the Island; which was likewise taken by Sir *Walter Ralrigh*, in the year above said, and in it the Governour *Antonio Berres*, who, to procure his liberty or fair

fair treating at Sir *Walcers* hands, is thought to have furnished him with some relations concerning *Guiana* more liberally than otherwise he needed.

Tabago lyeth Eastward of *Trinidad*, and is divided from it by a little Sea of eight miles over, said to have, for the bigness of it, as many safe Harbours belonging to it, as any Island of *America*. The Dutch of late years have named it *Nieu-Walacheren*; and are said to frequent it; but for what special Commodities or reason, doth not appear.

CHAP. XVIII.

Of *Paria*, or *New-Andalusia*.

THe last, but not the least Province of the Southern *America*, is the Country of *Paria*, by some called *New-Andalusia*, but for what reason or resemblance with *Andalusia* of *Old-Spain* they do not tell us. This Country lying as it doth, brings us back again by the Eastern Coast to the Isthmus or *Strait*, which, as we have often said, joyns the two parts of the Continent of *America* together; at least to those Countries that lye next upon it to the

South

South, viz. the new Kingdome of *Granada*, &c. It hath on the East *Guiana*, and those Islands which lye about the mouth of *Orenoque*; on the West the Gulf or Bay of *Venezuela*, with some part of the New Kingdome above-said; on the North it is washed with the Atlantick Ocean, and hath on the South some Countries not yet discovered, toward the *Andes*. The whole consisteth partly of Continent and partly of Islands, neer adjoyning to it; and is commonly divided into five several Provinces or parts, which are 1. *Cumana*. 2. *Venezuela*. 3. *Margarita*. 4. *Cubagua*: And 5. some lesser Islands.

2. *Cumana* is bounded Eastward with the Gulf of *Paria*, and the River *Orenoque*; on the West with *Venezuela*: Northward it hath the Atlantick Ocean; and on the South those undiscovered Countries above-mentioned: containing in length two hundred leagues or more, as some say, and not much less than one hundred in breadth; but for ought appears, little of it planted or used, save only upon the Sea side, where the Coast hath formerly been much famed for the rich Trade of Pearls and Pearl-Fishing; which failing, its principal esteem now is for an excellent vein of Salt, which they digg here as one of a Mine, and

and gather it naturally made ready to their hands, not half a mile from the Sea side, on the back-side of the Promontory or Cape, called by some *Punto de Araya*, and by others for this reason *Cape de Salinas*. Places of chief consideration here are, 1. *Cumana* it self, a Colony of Spaniards seated on the banks of a little River two miles distant from the Sea where it hath a good Harbour. 2. *St. Jago*, a very strong fortress, which the Spaniards of late yeares have built, for the defence and security of the Salt-works against the Dutch, who began to trade much that way, and in the yeare 1622, had a design to have made themselves Masters of the Place. 3. *St. Michael de Neveri*, another Fortress of theirs upon a River so called. 4. *Guaniba*, a Town of the Natives. *Venezuela*, the principall part of this Province, is bordered on the East with *Cumana*; on the West with a great Gulf, or Bay, commonly called the Bay of *Venezuela*, with the Lake *Maracaba*, and some part of *New-Granada*; Nothward it hath the Ocean, or Atlantick Sea; southward some undiscovered Countries, which, as we said, lye betwixt the *Andes* and it. It stretches out in length from East to West one hundred and thirty leagues

or thereabouts, but in breadth little more than
 half so much; being named *Venezuela*, or
little Venice, by *Alonso de Oyeda* a Spaniard,
 who at his first discovery of the Country fell
 upon a Town of the Natives, which stood like
 another *Venice*, all upon the waters, and hav-
 ing no passage to it, but only by Boats. Its a
 Country extraordinary rich in all sorts of
 Commodities, affords good Pasture for
 Cattel, and abundance of fair herds of them,
 Oxen, Sheep, Swine, &c. plenty of Corn and
 other Grain, great store of Venison likewise
 in the Woods, of Fish in the Rivers, Gold
 in the Mines; and therefore not likely but to
 be well peopled and inhabited, especially by
 the Spaniards, whose Towns and places of
 chief importance are these, *viz.* 1. *Venezuela*,
 at the most westerly Confines of the Country,
 built upon the Sea, with the advantage of a
 double Haven, in a temperate and good Aire,
 and Soil round about it, the richest and best
 of the whole Province. It is now a Bishops
 See, who is Suffragan to the Arch-Bishop of
St. Domingo in *Hispaniola*, and the ordinary
 Residence of the Governour. 2. *Caravalleda*,
 called by the Spaniards *Nuestra Señora de*
Caravalleda, fourscore leagues distant from
Venezuela toward the East, upon the Sea,
 likewise.

likewise. 3. *St. Jago de Leon* in the Country of *Caracas* four or five leagues southward of *Caravalleda*, and six or seven distant from the Sea. 4. *New-Valentia*, twenty five leagues distant from *St. Jago*. 5. *New-Xeres*, Town but lately built fifteen leagues southward of *New-Valentia*. 6. *New-Segevia*, but one league distant from *Xeres*. 7. *Tucuy* a place well known and frequented, for the abundance of Sugar which is made there, and in the Country round about it. 8. *Truxillo* or our *Lady de la Paz*, eighteen leagues southward of the Lake *Maracaybo*; a place of great resort, and much frequented for trade both by Spaniards and Natives. 9. *Laguna*, a Town lying more towards the bottom of the Lake said to be much haunted with Tygres; and more than this, not much is said of it.

4. *Margarita* is an Island lying right over against the *Salinas*, or *Cape de Araya* aforementioned, seven or eight leagues distant from the Main-land, and taking its name from the abundance of Pearles found about it, when time was. It contains not above fifteen or sixteen leagues in length, and about six in breadth, having these only places of importance in it, viz. *San Pater*, which is a good Fort of the Spaniards built at the East An-

le of the Island, to secure their Pearl-fishing
 when that Trade held, and to defend their
 ships, which commonly rode there at Anchor.
 the Valley of *Sta. Lucia*, two leagues di-
 ant from the Sea, where the Spaniards have
 Colony. 3. *Makanao*, a Town of the Na-
 ves. This whole Island was surpris'd by the
 English under Captain *Parker* in the year
 1601, who in stead of Prisoners carried a-
 way good store of the Spaniards Pearl,
 which he forced them to pay for their ran-
 some.

5. *Cubagna*, another Island pertaining to
 his Province of *Paria*, lyeth almost in the
 middle way betwixt the Island *Margarita* and
 the Continent; from which last it is not coun-
 ted to be above a league distant, and five or
 six from the other; being it self in the com-
 pass of the whole, not much above three or
 four: of a Soil wholly barren and destitute
 of all kinde of necessaries for the life and sus-
 tenance of man, without Corn, without Pastu-
 rage, without Fruit, without water; yet only
 for the richness of the Pearl-fishing round a-
 bout it, for many yeares together, there was
 no place more frequented than it. Nor is it at
 present wholly deserted: for though the
 Trade of Pearls be said to have failed for some
 yeares

years, yet have they a Colony still remaining there, called *New Cadix*; and on the East part of the Islands a certain Fountain, not far from the Sea side, which yeeldeth a kinde of Bituminous substance like Oyle, of such a medicinal vertue for many diseases, that it sufficiently recompenseth the want of the Pearle by a more reall utility and benefit, & is found in good plenty floating for the most part upon the Sea thereabout.

5. The lesser Islands (as they are called) part of this Provinciall Prefecture of *Paria* lie all along upon the coasts of *Venezuela* from East to West; in number many, but the principall of them are 1. *Tortuga*, a little Island said to be not above four or five miles in length, and in breadth hardly one; but well known for the abundance of good Salt that is made, and transported thence every yeare; it lieth five or six leagues westward of *Margarita*; hath a good Harbour, and abundance of that wood called *Guaiacum*, of which we spake before. 2. *Bonayre*, an Island of five or six leagues in compass; well stored with small Cattell, especially Sheep and Goates. It lyeth right over against the Bay called *Golfo Triste*, or the *Unfortunate Bay*, and was the place whether the Spaniards transplanted the poor Natives.

Natives of *Hispaniola*, when they grew weary of killing them. 3. *Caracae* three or four leagues westward of *Bonayre*, and containing about so many in compass, of a soil exceedingly fertill and good for Pasturage, having likewise on the north side of the Island a very good and safe Harbour for shipping. 4. *Aruba*, three or four leagues distant from *Caracae* to the North-east, about five miles in compass, being for the most part a level and flat Country, inhabited, but not much, either by Spaniards or Natives. 5. *Los Monjes*, or the *Monks*, as the Spaniards named them: These are three or four lesser Island lying eastward of the *Cape Caguibocoa* of great use and direction at Sea, to those that sail for *Carthage*, but for any thing else scarcely memorable.

Hh

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Of the American Islands.

I. **V**E have spoken hitherto only of the Continent of *America*, and those Islands, which lye so neer the Continent, that they are commonly reckoned as part of it, and appertaining to the respective Provinces against which they lie. It remains now, (not to leave any thing considerable untouched at least) that we take a view of some other Islands *viz.* that lie further off and seem not to have any other relation to *America*, but only that of obedience and subjection to the Spaniards government, who are Lords of *America*, and have reduced at least the principal and chief of those Islands, long since under their power. They lye either in the South or the North Sea. Those in the South, or *Mare del Zur* are chiefly two, *viz.* *Los Ladrones*, and the Islands *Fernandina*. *Los Ladrones*, in English, the Islands of Theeves, lye as it were

in the middle way betwixt the Main-land of *America* and the *Philippine Islands*, but some hundred of leagues distant from either, in the fourth degree of Northern latitude. So named by *Ferdinand Magellan*, from the pilfering disposition he observed in the Natives, when he sailed that way for the *Molucca Islands*. They were a nimble and active sort of People, yet light-fingered, it should seem, and going for the most part naked, tall of stature, excellent Swimmers and Divers, and have not much more to be spoken in their Commendation. The *Fernandina* are only two Islands of no great bigness lying over against the coast of *Chile*, in the three and thirtieth degree of Southern latitude, and about one hundred leagues, or three hundred English miles from the Continent : yet well stored with some lesser sort of Cattel, as Goats, &c. good plenty likewise of Venison in the Woods, and of Fish upon the Coasts : for which reason, though lying at some distance, yet are they not a little frequented by the Spaniards of *Peru* ; who find many good Harbours and roads for shipping belonging to, and about these Islands.

But the chief, viz. of the American Islands

H h 2

abovesaid,

abovesaid, are those which lye in the Atlantick or North-Sea, on the East side, and as it were in the way to the Continent of *America*; which are as follow, viz. 1. The *Caribes*. 2. *Port-rico*. 3. *Hispaniola*. 4. *Cuba*, and 5. *Jamaica*.

Of the Caribee Islands.

2. **T**He *Caribee*-Islands (as the English commonly call them) are a row or ridge, as it were of lesser Islands, which extend themselves, almost in fashion of a Bow, from the Coast of *Paria*, as far as *St. John de Port-rico*: The name signifies as much as the Islands of Cannibals, or *Man-Eaters*; and so the Natives generally were, before they were either destroyed or reduced to better manners by the Spaniards. There are many of them, but the principall and those which seem most worthy of notice are, 1. *Granada*: This lyeth in form of a Croissant or half-Moon, upon the Continent of *Paria*, viz. that part of it which is called *Camana*; having a reasonable good Haven

Haven, and a Soil not altogether unfruitfull, but much over-shaded with Woods, and hitherto but little inhabited. 2. *St. Vincent*, six or seven leagues Northward of *Granada*, but from any part of the Continent ten at least : a very fruitfull Island, yeelding abundance of Sugar-Canes that grow naturally without any Art or help of Husbandry ; well watered with Rivers, and affording many convenient Bays and safe roads for shipping. It lyeth in a circular form, and is thought to contain about eight or ten leagues in compass ; Inhabited by a People not over much industrious, nor solicitous for ought but what concerns the belly. 3. *Dominica*, an Island of twelve leagues in length, very fruitfull of a good sort of Tobacco, which the Europeans have of the Natives chiefly in exchange of Knives, some Hatchets, and other Instruments of Iron, which they value much. It hath on the West side of it a convenient Harbour for ships ; but the People being said to continue Cannibals, and exceedingly barbarous, even to this present, no Nations as yet, have attempted to inhabit among them. 4. *La Deseada*, a small Island, but of great use to the Spaniards, who alwaies touch at it both coming and going.

going. 5. *Guadalupe*, another small Island, which they likewise take in their way continually to and from *America*: it serves them chiefly for fresh water, and lyeth eight or ten leagues Westward of *Deseada*. 6. *Antego*, as the English corruptly call it, rather *Antigua*, is an Island of about seven leagues in length, and almost as much in breadth, lying to the North-East of *Guadalupe*, where the English of late years are said to have planted a Colony, but wherein their Trade lyeth, doth not so well appear. 7. *St. Christophers*: This lyeth on the North-west of *Guadalupe*; where the English and French (both of them) having planted their several Colonies, were, not many years since, outed by the Spainiards, yet permitted quietly to pass to their other Plantations. The chief Commoditie which the Countrey yeeldeth is Tobacco; and in the Easterly parts of it some Salt. 8. *Barbados*: This is an Island at the North-East of *St. Vincent*, of an ovall form, and of the same bigness or extent with that of *St. Vincent*, that is, containing in the compass of the whole a matter of eighteen or twenty miles. It lyeth the most Easterly of all the rest of these Islands; of a Soil very lussy and good, especially for such Commodities

modities as are proper for it. On the East side it hath many Angles and Points shooting out into the Sea, which consequently make many Bays upon the Coast of it; but, by reason of certain quick-sands which lye before them, not much used or frequented by ships. On the South side it hath a large and convenient Harbour, capable of the tallest ships, and well frequented. It is counted now one of the best Colonies of the English, but said to have been heretofore not a little at the mercy of the Spaniard. Their chief Trade is Tobacco, and a kinde of course Sugar, which we call *Barbados-Sugar*, and will not keep long; not that the Countrie is unsapt for better, but, as 'tis rather supposed, because the Planters want either skill, or stock, to improve things to the best. The Countrie is somewhat hot, and it behoves an English man to be very temperate and wary, when he goes first thither. *S. Sta. Cruz*, called by the Natives anciently *Ayay*, fifteen leagues distant from *Port-rico* to the South-East, woody and Mountainous, having on the West side of it a convenient Harbour for shipping. They speak of a certain Fruit of this Countrie not unlike to a green Apple; which if a Man eat, it causeth such an inflammation

Hh 4

and swelling of his tongue, that for twenty four hours space at least, he looseth the use of it quite; but afterwards it asswageth of it self without further hurt: And also of certain Fen-waters, with which, if a Man chance to wash his face before noon, it likewise swells so much presently, that his eyes will be closed up; but in the afternoon no such matter; which I mention, because they say there is a Colony of English settled there of late years. There be many other of these Caribee Islands beside, as namely *Anguilla*, *Barbada*, *St. Bartholomews*, *Lau Nieves*, *St. Lucies*, *St. Martins*, *Montserrat*, &c. but of so little consideration, especially to our Nation, that it would seem but tedious to mention them further.

Of Port-rico and Monico.

Port-rico is an Island fifteen leagues distant from *Sea-Cruz*, as hath been said, to the North-west, and about as many from *Hispaniola* to the South-East; but from the Continent or main Land of *Paria* (which seems to be the neerest) one hundred and thir-

or one hundred and thirty six, as some
 reckon. It lyeth almost in a Quadrangle
 form, being supposed to contain about thirty
 leagues in length, and not less than twenty in
 breadth, in eighteen and nineteen degrees of
 Northern latitude. The Aire reasonably tem-
 perate and agreeable, not scorched with any
 excessive heats in Summer, nor beaten with
 those continuall rains, to which some parts of
America are subject, in Winter: its greatest
 annoyance being from those sudden and vio-
 lent tempests, which they call *Hurricanes*,
 which infect it very much, especially in the
 moneths of *August* and *September*. The Soil
 fruitfull enough, affording abundance of Su-
 gar-Canes, Ginger, *Cassia*, Hides, and divers
 other rich Commodities. As concerning the
 Mines both of gold and silver, which were
 once certainly known to be there, some say
 they are exhausted and spent long since, others
 think that is but a pretence of the Spaniards, to
 keep strangers from looking into the Country,
 while they themselves are more busied with
 Land. It is divided almost in the midst from
 East to West with a ridge of Mountains which
 the Spaniards call *Sierra del Loquillo*, and hath
 these Towns of chief note and importance.

viz.

ein. first *Port-rico* it self, commonly called *St. John de Port-rico*, a strong and neat Town well built in a little Island by it self, but joyned to the other by certain huge piles of Timber-work, of vast labour and expence, done by command of *Philip* the second, King of *Spain*. It was attempted by Sir *Francis Drake* in the year 1595 without success, but a few years afterwards by the Earl of *Cumberland*, as hath been said. 2. *St. Germans* in the West parts of the Island, three or four leagues distant from the Sea, a place, as 'tis said to be, neither fortified nor much frequented. 3. *Lussey* on the East side, a good and well frequented Port, some leaguer distant from *Port-rico*.

4. Eastward of *Port-rico*, and betwixt it and *Hispaniola* there lyeth a little, but fruitfull Island called *Adona*; and Westward of that another called *Adonica*, or *Adonetta*, which last the English, when time was, found so admirably stored with a sort of wilde Fowl, that the huge flights of them seemed to darken the Aire over their heads, and upon their landing found such plenty of their eggs upon the shore and ground thereabouts, that they presently laded two of their boats with them. But how Peopled or possessed not so well known.

of

Of Hispaniola.

1. **H** *Isipaniola* (or little Spain, as *Columbus* named it) is if not the largest, yet at least the fairest and goodliest of all the American Islands, called by the Natives anciently *Hayti*. It lyeth, as we said, fifteen leagues Westward of *Port-rico*, and distant from the main Land of *America* about one hundred and twenty; of a Triangular form; the sharpest point whereof is that towards *Port-rico*, which they call *Cabo de Enganno*. That towards the West inclines to a semi-circle, containing a good and convenient Bay betwixt the two points, viz. *St. Nicholas* to the North, and *Cabo de Donna Maria* towards the South. It's not thought to be less than one hundred and fifty leagues in length, in breadth from threescore to thirty, and to contain in the compass of the whole four hundred leagues at least; lying betwixt eighteen and twenty degrees of Northern latitude, having an Air somewhat infested with the morning heats, but well cooled again in the afternoon,

afternoon, by a constant winde from the Sea
 which they call there *Virafan*. It is, for the fer-
 tility of the Soil, the richest and most flourish-
 ing Countrey (one of them) in the World; the
 Trees and all things else there, continually clad
 as it were, in their Summer livery, the Mea-
 dows and Pastures alwaies green, and of such
 an excellent Herbage, that Cattel both breed
 and thrive there almost beyond belief; both
 great Cattel and small, as Kine, Sheep, Hogs
 &c. brought thither out of *Spain*, having mul-
 tiplied to such numbers, that they live wilde
 now in Heards, as hath been said, and are both
 hunted and killed, like Stags or other Venison
 only for their Hides, which they send yearly
 into *Spain* and other parts of *Europe*, as a great
 Merchandise and Commoditie of huge profit
 to them. So plentifull of Sugar-Canes, that
 'tis thought no less than one thousand Chests
 of refined Sugar are sent out of this only
 Island one year with another. Nor was it for-
 merly without good Mines, both of gold and
 silver; which whether they be now wasted
 and wholly exhaust, or only neglected for
 want of Miners to work in them, time may
 shew. Of Brass and Iron they have many good
 Mines at present, of no small profit and ad-
 vantage

vantage to them. The whole Island is said to
 be naturally divided, as it were, into four se-
 veral quarters, by four several Rivers, arising
 out of one and the same Mountain almost in
 the midst of the Island, that is to say, 1. *Jacho*,
 which runneth Northward. 2. *Nabila*, to-
 wards the South. 3. *Tanna*, or *Janna*, to
 the East: And 4. *Harebanico*, to the West:
 but others (it must be confessed) mention the
 same Rivers without any such speciall obser-
 vation. The chief Towns and places of this
 Island inhabited by Spaniards are first *St. Do-
 mingo*, on the South side of the Island, built
 first by *Bartholomew Columbus*, in the year
 1494; on the banks of *Ozama* one of the fairest
 Rivers of the Country, towards the Sea side;
 where it hath likewise a good Haven or Port,
 and on the West side of it a strong Castle.
 Its a place of great honor and dignity at pre-
 sent, being an Archbishops See, and the ordi-
 nary Residence of the Governor and supreme
 Courts for these parts of *America*, but flou-
 rished more formerly with resort and multi-
 tudes of people, than now it doth; which is
 attributed to the later discoveries of *Mexico*
 and *Pern*; by occasion whereof abundance
 of the Inhabitants, and not a little of the trade
 likewise

likewise hath been drawn from it. 2. *Salvador* twenty eight leagues distant from *St. Domingo* towards the East. 3. *Jaguana*, or *Sta. Maria del Puerto*, in the more western parts of the Island, a small Town not above a league distant from the Sea, where it hath a good Haven, but supposed not to be much fortified. 4. *Cotuy*, once a rich Town in the North parts of the Island, and well frequented: now said to be in a manner deserted. 5. *Concepcion de la Vega*, built by *Columbus* himself, and from whence he had his Title *Duke de la Vega*: it lyeth twenty or thirty leagues northward of *St. Domingo*. 6. *Puerto de la Plata*, or the *Silver Haven*, forty leagues distant from *St. Domingo* likewise towards the North, it is the second Town for wealth and trade in the whole Island, commodiously seated on a Bay, or Arme of the Sea, and fortified with a Castle. 7. *Azua*, or *New-Compostella*, twenty four miles, or eight leagues westward of *St. Domingo* and a place much frequented by reason of the good sugar-Canes, which the Country thereabouts yeeldeth. There is likewise 8. *St. Jago de los Caballeros*, ten leagues northward of *La Vega*. 9. *Monte Christo*, fourteen leagues westward of *Plata*, and

lastly

lastly
stand
go:
and
very
rally
Tran
then
con
ter

lye
or
th
C
H
N
e
R
i

lastly 10. *Zeybo* on the South-side of the Island, twenty leagues distant from *Sr. Domingo*; all of them pleasant and handsome Towns, and well seated, but destitute of Inhabitants very much: as likewise the whole Island generally is; the Natives being all destroyed, or Transplanted long since, and the Spaniards themselves, by the following discoveries and conquests upon the Continent, invited to better quarters.

Of Cuba and Jamaica.

1. **VV** Estward, or rather to the North-west of *Hispaniola* lyeth *Cuba*, parted from the other by a Frith, or narrow Channel, which runneth betwixt the Capes of *Sr. Nicholas*, belonging to *Hispaniola*, and that called *Mayz* belonging to *Cuba*. On the North it hath a Frise of little Islands, called, as above said, the *Leucaya* Islands, so many and so thick scattered, that they serve for no small security and defence of the Island on that side; beside a part of the *Peninsula* of *Florida* which coasteth it likewise North.

Northward; on the west it hath the Count
 of *Yucatan*, which is part of the Continent
 but at a distance of forty or fifty leagues
 and on the South *Jamaica*. It is reckoned
 to be in length from Cape *Maya*, which look
 towards *Hispaniola*, to the Cape of *St. Anth*
 ny which is upon the Bay of *Mexico*; tw
 hundred and thirty leagues; but in bread
 neither proportionable nor certain; being
 some places not above fifteen or sixteen
 leagues over; & in none above forty. But fo
 fertility of soil contending with *Hispaniola*
 self, and for temperature & healthiness of air
 much exceeding it: nor less rich formerly in
 good Mines both of gold and silver, plentiful
 stored at present, not only with Sugar Canes o
 the best growth, but likewise with abundance
 of Ginger-roots, *Cassia Fistula*, Mastique, A
 loes, Cinnamon, Long-Pepper of *America*
 as they call it, and divers sorts of spices. Th
 Pastures no less abounding with Cattle
 of all sorts, especially of European breed; th
 Rivers, and coasts of the Sea with good Fish
 no scarcity of Fowl whether wild or tame
 good Mines of Brass and Iron still found
 with some Gold in the Rivers, especially
 those which fall into the Bay *Pagua* or the
 South

South-side of the Island. The Woods, where the Country is mountainous and rocky as in some parts it is, well replenished with Timber, and many odoriferous trees beside, from which they gather a certain Resin, or Gumme, not less precious and usefull than the *Storax*, or sweet Gumme so called, of which the Herborists speak so much. In a word the only inconvenience which the Spaniards found in it, was from Serpents, which the Natives out of an old superstition among them, had preserved so long, they came to be grievously annoyed by them at last; and when they would have destroyed them, could not; what remedy the Spaniards have since provided against them, appears not. The River *Canto*, which is one of the chiefest Rivers of the Island, is still said to be much haunted with Crocodiles; that are very dangerous to strangers unacquainted with the Country, and to any that rest or sleep near the banks of the River.

a. The Towns and places of chief importance belonging to this Island are, 1. *St. Jago*, seated at the bottom of a large and capacious Bay on the South-side of the Island, two or three leagues distant from the Sea, and counted the chiefest Port on that side. It is a Bishops see, and once a very populous and rich

place of trade, but at present not a little decayed, only for want of Inhabitants, who are advanced more up into the Continent, having left the Islands behinde them more than half empty. Neer unto this place, *viz.* about three or four leagues distance, are those famous Mountains, which the Spaniards call *Sierres de Cobre*, or the *Brass Mountains*, from the abundance of that Metal which the Mines in them doe still afford, 2. *Baracao*, thirty leagues Eastward of *St. Jago* toward the Sea. 3. *Bayamo*, or *St. Salvador*, seated more within land in a rich and pleasant part of the Island, but not so commodious for trade. 4. *Puerto del Principe* on the North side of the Island forty leagues distant from *St. Jago*, neer to which, saith *Laet*, there is a Fountain, which sendeth forth a liquor of a Bituminous substance, and black as Pitch, very good and much used in those parts for the calking of Ships, and gathered in great abundance upon the Sea, into which it falleth, and is sometimes digged also, as out of a Mine. 6. *La Trinidad* nine or ten leagues Eastward of the Bay of *Xagua*. Lastly 6. *Havana*, the most known and best traded Port absolutely of all these parts, and and perhaps of the whole Continent, lying

ing at the most northerly point of the Island towards *Cape Florida*; a place naturally strong, and so well fortified by Art, that it is held impregnable. The entrance whereof is defended on each side with a strong Castle, and a stronger than either built right opposite to the Mouth of the Haven; and all of them so commodiously and advantageously situated for the defence and assistance of each other, (as 'tis said) nothing can be devised better. Close to one of them there is erected a watch-Tower, of such height, that from the top of it, they easily descry whatsoever Ships move upon those Seas, and give notice of them to the Guards; being thereby a very great assurance not only to the Inhabitants of this place and Island, but also to the whole Bay of *Mexico*. And is therefore the ordinary Seat of the Governour, and the generall Rendezvous of the Spanish Ships, when they goe home for *Spain*, meeting heer from all parts of the Gulf, and tarrying one for another till all be come in, and from thence setting sail for *Spain*, through the *Straits of Bahama*, and by some of the *Leucaye* Islands above mentioned. It is likewise a very strong Garrison; it being said, that the King of *Spain* allowes pay for no less number

than 1000. Souldiers only for this place.

Jamaica is somewhat a lesser Island, lying Southward of *Cuba*, and to the West of *Hispaniola*, almost at an equall distance, viz. twenty leagues from them both. They reckon it to be in length about fifty leagues or more in breadth twenty, and to contain in the whole about one hundred and fifty, of a rich and fertil Soil, and in nothing less provided for the necessities of mans life, than either *Hispaniola* or *Cuba*; well stock'd with Cattel, and as plentifully stored with Fruits of all sorts, yeelding abundance of Cotton-wooll, more than either of the other Islands: only it wanteth the conveniency of some good Havens and Ports, which it hath but few; and the Sea round about it so shelvy, and full of Rocks and broken Islands, that the coast of it is held to be not a little dangerous: and therefore as little frequented by Merchants or others. There being at present three only small Towns inhabited in the whole Island, viz. 1. *Sevilla*, or *New-Sevill*, in the North party of the Island. 2. *Melilla* ten leagues distant from *Sevill* towards the East. And lastly *Oristan*, 14. leagues distant from it towards the South.



Errata.

P Ag. 4. for their read there, p. 26. for degress r. leagues, p. 57. for abstemious r. abstemious, p. 43. for de bios r. de Dios, p. 48. for Philippine r. Philippine, p. 106. for rending r. trending, p. 154. for cleerer r. cheers, p. 166. for times r. time, p. 171. for dusty r. dusky, p. 176. for Oval r. Oval, p. 192. for in line r. in a line, p. 208. for unparalled r. unparal-
 leld, p. 217. for more r. no more, p. 224. for Cathay r. Cathay, for Duch r. Dutch, p. 232. for these, and some r. there are some, p. 239. for enquire of r. enquire, p. 242. for thought r. thought, p. 243. for Georges bay r. St. Georges bay, p. 344. for Role r. Rose, p. 369. for these r. those, p. 419. for thirty thousand r. three thousand, p. 437. for Diagon. Diagon.

now printed, and to be sold by Edward Dod,
at the Gun in Ivie-Lane.

A Newire Commentary on the old Testament in four
Volumes, wherein the divers translations and
explications literal and mystical, of all the most famous
Commentators; both ancient and modern are pro-
pounded, examined and Judged off, for the more full
satisfaction of the Studious in all things, which com-
pleaseth the Authors Comment on the whole Bible,
the like never yet published in english by any; writ-
ten by John Mayer, D. D. in folio.

Natures Paradox, an excellent Romance, in quarto,
translated by Major Wright.

Lucasta Epodes, Odes, Sonnets, Songs, by R. Love-
lace Esquire, in Octavo.

The Life and death of Mr. Carter, with a funerall Ser-
mon, in Octavo.

The Joviall Crew of Merry Beggars, by R. Brome, in
quarto.

The Deputation of Angels, or the Angel Guardian, pro-
ved by the dim light of Nature, by Robert Dingley,
in Octavo.

The Reign of King Charles, faithfully & impartially deli-
vered and disposed into Annals, by H. L. Esquire.

